



EVIL EMPEROR'S WILD CONSORT

BOOK 01

Xiao Qi Ye

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Evil Emperor's Wild Consort

(废柴要逆天：魔帝狂妃)

by

Xiao Qi Ye

(萧七爷)

Synopsis

She has come a long way.

Orphaned, born a weakling, and being the infamous good-for-nothing of Azure Dragon Country. Gu Ruoyun was the shame of the proud Gu household. Falsely accused of a crime she did not commit, she was betrayed by her family and beaten to death by her own grandfather. But life took a fateful twist on that very day — she was revived.

Newly awakened, she is now the Master of an ancient treasure that resides within her body. Precious cultivation pills, treasures beyond her wildest imagination and spiritual beasts, all within her grasp... She is the apple of the eye of all under the heavens, including that of a mysterious, handsome man.

Now she only has one goal — to conquer the world.

Acknowledgement

All rights reserved.

English Translation by EndlessFantasy Translation @ [Qidian International](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 1: A Contemptible Man (1)

East Peak Mainland.

High up on the mountain, the wind howled furiously.

Xia Ruoyun was standing motionless on top of the mountain, her hair entangled wildly with the wind. The chilly gaze of hers was fixed upon the group of people in front of her. Among that group of people, there stood a middle-aged man who was dressed luxuriously.

In the eyes of that man was a chilly and emotionless gaze, prompting Xia Ruoyun to shiver all over from head to toe, with a sense iciness enveloping her heart.

"Xia Ruoyun, you have been running away for too long! Let's see how are you going to be able to escape again this time!"

The middle-aged man laughed out scornfully, a disdainful half smile hanging on his lips. His eyes looked as if he was piercing through his sworn enemy, as though the girl in front of him was not of his own flesh and blood.

"The Ancient Divine Pagoda was passed to me by Grandfather when he was still alive. I will never ever give it away to anybody!"

There was an unmistakable tone of hatred in Xia Ruoyun's voice.

Back in those days, just because of that one sentence uttered by her grandfather: "Whoever marries the daughter of the Yun family will be able to become the head of the Xia family", her so-called father dumped his childhood lover and proceeded to court her mother instead.

Within the same month that her mother got married to him, he actually went ahead and had a second marriage with his ex-lover, making her the second wife of the Xia family.

As the head of the Xia family, having multiple wives was totally

normal. There was completely nothing that her mother could do, other than crying her eyes out everyday.

Had it not been for her grandfather who felt sorry for her, her mother would probably have no place at all in the Xia family...

With his face darkening a few shades, Xia Ming said loathingly, "You atrocious lady, the Ancient Divine Pagoda actually belongs to Chu Xue. How dare you talk to me like that after you have stolen her stuff? Don't you ever forget that when she was born, there were the signs of anomaly from the Heavens. The Emperor's Teacher even prophesied that she was the reincarnation of the Ancient Phoenix. Father must have been confused and muddled in his mind to have passed the Ancient Divine Pagoda to you. Now that he is already dead, it is up to me to set this right again!"

"Ha ha ha!" Xia Ruoyun let out a boisterous laugh that echoed for a long time in the distant mountains.

"Did you actually forget that the day that Chu Xue was born was actually my birthday too? Grandfather must have his reasons for handing down the Pagoda to me. But look at you!"

She sneered and continued, "In the interest of getting the Pagoda, you tortured me cruelly. In order to save me, Mother was tormented and persecuted to death by you, dirty swine! Her whole family was also massacred completely by your own hands! How could you still consider yourself as a human being? You did not even hesitate to slaughter your wife just for the sake of another daughter!"

"Humph!!" Xia Ming let out a disdainful snort and said coldly, "She was not worthy to be my wife. It doesn't matter whether the reason was you or not, I would still not have let her continue to live. It was only with her death that the woman that I love could rise up to the throne!"

Woefully, Xia Ruoyun shut both of her eyes in grief. The image of her mother's tragic life was still etched into her mind.

She really had given up!

Given up the consignment that was entrusted by her grandfather and wanting to use the Pagoda to exchange for her mother's life instead. However, it was as if Mother knew clearly what she was going to do and so, she chose to use her own death to protect the Ancient Divine Pagoda.

Even just the mere thought of it now still gave her an enormous sense of heartbreak and pain!

"Xia Ming, with all things that you have done, you will eventually be full of remorse and regret! A man like you who is so treacherous, heartless and perfidious will get your payback and punishment and be looked down forever!"

"Regret?" Xia Ming let out a scoff. "Do you even know about the rumour that is about you?" You, Xia Ruoyun, an arrogant and conceited girl, has provoked an insidious enemy and it was because of this reason that every member of the Yun family was massacred! As for me, Xia Ming, am a faithful and pitiful widower who mourned sorrowfully for your mother. Even Chu Xia was so heartbroken that she passed out multiple times. It was only you, the ungrateful cowardice daughter, who went into hiding after bringing such suffering to the family. Then again.... ha ha ha! Your mother didn't even get to be buried in the ancestral grave of the Xia family! I threw her body into the unmarked mass grave and it was devoured by the pack of wolves there! The Xia family ancestral grave is not a place where a nameless woman can easily enter!"

Chapter 2: A Contemptible Man (2)

Lightly shuddering, Xia Ruoyun opened her eyes. All of her hatred was fixated on the man before her as she cried out, "Xiaming, you contemptible--!"

"Contemptible?" Xiaming laughed scornfully. "This? It's just survival of the fittest! You see? It's this precise ignorance of yours that had your mother murdered. That's right; The one who killed her was you!"

The one who killed her was you.

"HAHAHAHA!" An abrupt outburst of manic laughter tore off from her throat. It pounded up the air, surrounding the hills with menacing echoes.

"Hey Xiaming, how about I bring you bastard down under to offer a personal apology to my poor mother? In fact, I'll bring you with me.... Now!"

Immediately, her energy field intensified exponentially. It was so intense that it obscured the lights from the sky, the ashen surrounding now thick with a sense of foreboding.

"NO!" Xiaming's face paled, murmuring to himself. "She's going to blow herself up!"

Xia Ruoyun was the prodigy hailed from the Xia family — a savant who had already attained the title of Martial Honor at just a tender age. If not for the Yun Family's "Devastation" he used in the prior attack, Xiaming wouldn't have successfully and heavily injured her with his sneak attack. Yet, injuring a Martial Honor means nothing if she was going for an assault of a mutually-assured destruction!

Pccchh!

Suddenly, shredding through the still air of the hills, was an abrupt sound of a human chest being stabbed through.

Xia Ruoyun's body froze, her gaze fell to the blade lodged in her chest. She turned her head slowly to a chiseled, handsome face. "Luchen... You...."

She knew Luchen was going to appear. But because it was Luchen, she had allowed herself to let her guard down.

She could not believe this. The man she trusted the most would want her killed!

Energy exploded out from her body, vaporizing the blade into sparks. Her hand held her chest as it bled, her eyes bleed in disbelief and deep sorrow, "Why would you...?"

Kill me?

The last two words were trapped by the lump in her throat. She just could not say them out.

A faint semblance of guilt and sadness flickered in Luchen's eyes, but they were gone in a flash.

"My dear Yun, I'm sorry... But I am an ambitious man. You may be the love of my life, but only Chuxue is the reincarnated avatar of the Ancient Phoenix Zhixie, the true arbiter of the Ancient Divine Pagoda! With its power, she will become the strongest of this realm. Whoever marries her would then essentially own the world, and that is why I did what I had to do..."

Xia Ruoyun's face was drained of any color. The man she loved or who had sworn to love and protect her forever was now pettily wagging a blade against her.

Suddenly, as if she remembered something, she charged towards Luchen like a possessed woman.

"My brother! My brother Yu, whom you promised to protect! What have you done to him, you wretch?!" Intense pain shot through her body but she ignored them, with her attention fixated on him as she clutched his shirt in hysterical fits.

Mother is dead. Her grandfather and his family were dead too. Her baby brother was all she had now! She had trusted Luchen and she had wanted her baby brother to stay out of this. That was why she had trusted Yu with this bastard. But now...

Xia Ruoyun's body shook as suspicion rose within her. Fear began to shroud her sickly face. It was so pitiful, even Luchen felt a throb in his chest.

It was short-lived. His heart hardened immediately, and so did his voice as he ordered his men, "Bring me Xia Linyu!"

A thump was heard as a half-dead boy was thrown towards their direction. His frail body swayed and shuddered in this howling gale as if he could be blown away by the wind.

Chapter 3: A Contemptible Man (3)

"Yu'er!" A heart-wrenching scream escaped from her throat as tears broke free from her eyes.

The boy, perhaps upon hearing familiarity behind the hysteric cry, finally stirred weakly. Those eyes that were once so clear, could now only tiredly gazed upon Xia Ruoyun. "Sis...ter..." He tried to muster his strength, yet his voice was devoid of any.

She coughed, splattering her garment with blood. "Release him!"

"Release him? Return the Ancient Divine Pagoda to us. Then, we talk," Luchen snickered, trying his best to conceal any lingering feelings he still had for Xia Ruoyun.

What are the worth of women, when compared to power? After all, once a man had obtained power, women themselves would come flocking to him.

Xia Ruoyun's face was very quickly draining out of life. She turned to the middle-aged man behind her, whose face was not the slightest bit fazed. "He is your son! The blood of the Xia family runs in him!"

Xia Ming laughed scornfully at her remark, his voice chilly as he replied, "The blood of mine? It only runs in Chu Xue alone! A weak, incompetent, sickly child like Xia Lingyu is no son of mine! At least, for the sake of the Ancient Divine Pagoda, his death could be worth something!"

Xia Ruoyun shuddered. She closed her eyes for a long while, then opened them again. This time, her gaze was soft as she looked at the bloodied body of the poor boy.

"Is this frightening you, my brother?"

The frail boy shook his head with an indignant might. "No! Don't let them have it, Big Sister! Mother and Grandfather would be dying in vain if they do! I...I believe in you. I believe that my sister

will avenge me one day..."

THUD! Lu Chen pounded his foot on Xia Lingyu's chest, and blood poured out of the boy's mouth. His face paled and his body sagged onto the floor.

"This is an order." Lu Chen looked up, his face revealing no emotion. "Rip Xia Lingyu's internal organs out, and have his limbs severed alive!"

That cold voice rang like a hammer pounding into her heart. She howled in fury, "Lu Chen, you bastard! I should have never trusted you with Yu'er! It's because of me that my precious brother is suffering!"

Bleak tears, filled with sorrow, ran down untamed—not before long, her eyes started widening hysterically as she threw herself towards her brother. But she could not make it to him. Lu Chen struck her body as she sprinted forward, and knocked her off the ground. Her body smacked onto the ground from the force.

Two men pinned Xia Lingyu onto the ground. Then, his limbs were sliced off by the icy blades of their swords. Fresh blood burst from the cuts, soaking her vision with its crimson color.

"No!!!"

Her eyes were bloodshot as she cried out hoarsely, "Let him go! Let him go! If you let him go... I--!"

"Sister." It was a very weak whisper, but it echoed among the hills, and it echoed clearly in her ears.

"Don't...ever...give them...The Ancient...Di-divine Pagoda....Only it c-can avenge M-Mother...For this, I'm willing...to die."

The sound of flesh being torn apart seemed to be amplified. A long blade had run itself into his chest, pinning whatever left of his words into his throat forever...

Xia Lingyu's body lay on his own pool of blood. His widening eyes

seemed to be saying the words his throat could no longer say. He felt his life escaping him, while his eyes showed how reluctant he was to leave.

He was going to see Mother soon, but...what about his sister? He was already the last of her family. With himself gone, she would be so....lonely...

"Yu'er!!!"

The stress wringing on her heart forced another outpour of blood from her chest as Xia Ruoyun stumbled to her brother in a limping gait.

"It's my fault! It's my wrongdoing...I put my faith in someone else, and now you're suffering from my judgement!"

"Grandfather is dead, Mother is dead... Only you are left on my side, Brother!"

"Yu'er...If...If there is a next life...I swear I will protect you from any single harm, I will let you live in everlasting peace..."

Chapter 4: Good-For-Nothing (1)

Xia Ruoyun stood up slowly, her black hair dancing in the gale. She lifted her head, a never before seen madness engulfing her tear-filled face.

"I want all of you to be buried with Yu!"

Hong!

The sky was suddenly overshadowed. Lightning flashed and thunder boomed as lightning struck down mercilessly and lit up the dark sky.

"After receiving such grievous wounds, she still has the energy to self-destruct!" Xiaming's expression changed and his face darkened.

He had to admit, this daughter of his had strong talents. It was a pity she wasn't born of his beloved woman. If she was allowed to grow even more, Chuxue and her daughter will definitely suffer.

That was a sight he would not like to see.

In order to protect his beloved daughter, he could only give up on this bastard which should never have been born!

"Hahaha!"

Xia Ruoyun started laughing wildly. Her laugh was filled with strong, bitter hatred. She said maniacally, "Xiaming, Luchen, I would avenge them today even if it costs me my life! It's a pity that Xia Chuxue isn't here. Wouldn't it be nice if we could all keep each other company as we go to hell?"

Hong!

A strong energy field expanded around her. Rocks in the valley were lifted up abruptly as though orchestrated by the wild laughter of the girl which made Xiaming's heart shudder.

But nothing happened...

The entire valley fell silent once again.

Pcchh!

Xia Ruoyun spat a mouthful of fresh blood, her knee meeting the ground heavily. Fresh blood was spurting out of her mouth continuously. She looked with unwillingness and hatred at the bunch of people in front of her...

"Why? Why stop me from self-destructing?"

She lowered her head and clenched her fists. Her faint voice seethed with anger.

During that previous moment, she had clearly felt that it was the Ancient Divine Pagoda which stopped her self-destruction. This was also the first time that she felt its movement ever since she got it...

"You don't want my soul to disappear? But if I cannot avenge them, what use is this soul of mine to me? Even if my soul and body are completely destroyed, I will drag them down to hell with me!"

Xia Ruoyun's voice started to tremble. However, the current her did not have the energy to execute her self-destruction for the second time...

"Yu, I'm sorry. Your sister is useless. I couldn't avenge you."

Tears trickled freely down her face and seeped into the ground.

She started laughing all of a sudden. "I, Xia Ruoyun, hereby swear that one day I will let these people who have hurt me pay, the, bloody, price! I will doom them eternally beyond redemption! For this, I would give my soul to the eternal hell as the price!"

The girl's voice was like a curse echoing around Luchen's ears. A sudden panic rose up within him. He dared not look into those eyes filled with deep hatred...

Pcchh!

Xia Ruoyun spat out a mouthful of fresh blood. Her gaze scanned the faces of the people in front of her, as if wanting to memorize their appearances, searing their looks into her brain...

"Her innards have been destroyed. She will not live."

Xiaming looked down coldly at the girl on the ground, as if this was not his daughter, but an enemy that he hated to live under the same sky with...

"Xia Ruoyun, surrender the Ancient Divine Pagoda!"

"Heh..."

Xia Ruoyun sneered. Her arm wrapped tightly around the misshapen body of the youth. She stood up slowly, turned without hesitation and jumped off the cliff with Xia Linyu...

"Damn it!"

Xiaming's face became pale and his eyes went dark. "Men! Go and search for her body! I don't believe that we can't find the Ancient Divine Pagoda!"

Chapter 5: Good-For-Nothing (2)

West Spirit Mainland, Azure Dragon Country.

In the backyard of the general's quarters, a young lady sat cross-legged slovenly on the bed with a straw in her mouth.

"West Spirit Mainland?"

As if talking to herself, Xia Ruoyun's lips curved upwards at a mild angle.

"It seems that I have reincarnated from East Peak Mainland to West Spirit Mainland. Maybe even the gods can't stand Xiaming's actions and gave me another chance at life?"

This world was made up of countless mainlands after all.

What she did not expect was, compared to her original talent, this Gu Ruoyun was a complete good-for-nothing! She was already fifteen years old, but she hadn't even reached the third level of Qi collection.

Even the slaves in the general's quarters were level four and above.

Of course, Gu Ruoyun was also extremely miserable. She had lost her parents since she was young and she was a negligible existence to the people around her. If it weren't for her elder prodigy brother's protection, she wouldn't be able to do anything.

But her brother was accepted as a disciple by a force not long ago and he had to leave Azure Dragon Country.

Who'd have expected that shortly after he left, the Young Master of the Ling family had insulted him on purpose in front of Gu Ruoyun? To defend her brother, Gu Ruoyun had fought with the Young Master of the Ling family, but she was beaten half to death by the slaves of the Ling family.

The funny thing was that her own grandfather, the great general

of the general's quarters, had beaten her to death without even thinking.

When she thought of this, a sneer appeared on Gu Ruoyun's lips. "Gu Ruoyun, since I have taken over your body, then I am you! Don't worry, I will help you get your revenge. Just take it as a reward for letting me occupy your body.

While she was saying this, the door opened. When the person who pushed open the door met Gu Ruoyun's dark black eyes, she was clearly shocked.

"Gu Ruoyun, you're still alive?"

This Gu Ruoyun is really something, being able to survive even after a beating like that from Grandfather!

"That's right. Did you wish I were dead?"

Gu Ruoyun slightly curved her lips, looking at her with a spurious smile.

"Hng!" Gu Panpan snorted. "Since you're not dead, then go to the living room. Grandpa is waiting for you."

When she finished, she turned and left without looking back.

Gu Ruoyun squinted her eyes slightly. From her memory, she recognized this Gu Panpan as her second uncle's daughter. She had always been a proud girl and her elder brother Gu Xianglin was a prodigy, only second to brother Gu Shengxiao in the entire general's quarters. So, to help her brother Gu Xianglin vent, she had always bullied Gu Ruoyun when Gu Shengxiao wasn't around.

Gu Ruoyun didn't tell her brother about this so he wouldn't worry.

In the living room.

Gu Ruoyun had just entered and saw Old General Gu sitting on the high seat. Seated in his lower right was an elderly and a youth. She did not have to guess to know that the elderly was the head of

the Ling family, Ling Yi. As for the youth, it was the culprit who caused her to be beaten to death, the Young Master of Ling family.

"Gu Ruoyun, you're finally awake!"

Old General Gu's sword-like gaze was projected onto Gu Ruoyun. He said with a stern face, "You had the gall to bully and beat the Young Master of the Ling family in broad daylight. Hurry and apologize now!"

There was a royal concubine at the palace from the Ling family, and she was a person he could never cross. If it pleased the Ling family, so what if they sacrificed a good-for-nothing? What he didn't expect was his timid granddaughter to have such courage!

Alas, she was only a good-for-nothing. If she was a prodigy like her brother, then even the imperial concubine empress wouldn't dare to touch her.

Chapter 6: Good-For-Nothing (3)

"Apologise?" Gu Ruoyun snorted. "Pray tell, did some water enter your brain? Didn't I beat the Ling's family Young Master? Don't forget, I'm only a level two Qi collection good-for-nothing! The Young Master of the Ling family's power has already reached level five. How was I supposed to beat him up? If you fought with Azure Dragon Country's champion and someone said that you had hit the Azure Dragon Country's champion, would you have believed it?"

Old General Gu turned ghastly pale. Pa! His palm struck the table and he yelled, "You evil creature! You even dare defy your grandfather's order! If the Ling family says that it's your fault, then you must've been the one who provoked him! Kneel down now until they have forgiven you!"

"Haha!" Gu Ruoyun laughed loudly. A scornful arc emanated from the edge of her lips. "Clearly it was him who was jealous of Big Brother's talents and insulted him first. Now I'm the one who provoked him? It seems that not only did water enter your brain but your eyes as well. You're saying that the unscathed Young Master of the Ling family is the one who was bullied? Whereas the heavily injured me was the one who hit him? Grandpa, you're certainly one to back outsiders instead of the truth."

Old General Gu was stunned. He had already forgotten his anger and stared dumbfoundedly at Gu Ruoyun.

Was this...Was this his timid granddaughter? Since when did she become so organized and clear in her speech?

"Who exactly are you?"

Suddenly, Old General Gu's eyes darkened, a killing intent instantly filling the entire living room.

Even with Gu Ruoyun's weak abilities, if she utilized her Spiritual Force, she would've been able to withstand this killing

intent. However, if she had done that, she would have exposed herself so she did not take the risk. Instead, she let herself be washed over by the killing intent.

"What, do you want to kill me?" Gu Ruoyun lifted her pale face and jeered, "You have already killed me with a stick once. If it weren't for my stubborn will to live, I wouldn't have survived that. If you want to kill me now, then so be it! I just don't know how you're going to explain it to Big Brother once he comes back."

Old General Gu squinted his eyes slightly.

Actually, he had regretted killing Gu Ruoyun with the stick. Even if Gu Ruoyun was a good-for-nothing, she still had an elder brother who would cover for her. If it weren't for Gu Ruoyun's stubbornness to confess, he wouldn't have acted out of anger...

Thankfully this good-for-nothing had only stopped breathing momentarily and her heartbeat was restored quickly.

But how would Old General Gu have known that in that short span of time, the soul residing in this body had been swapped...

"Hng, if you are Gu Ruoyun, then I really have to explain to Shengxiao. Alas, you're not!" Old General Gu bellowed, "Who exactly are you? That timid good-for-nothing Gu Ruoyun would never say these kinds of things!"

Suddenly, all eyes in the room were fixed on Gu Ruoyun's delicate face.

Gu Ruoyun did not seem to notice and smiled. "Whether I Gu Ruoyun or not, shouldn't you be the one who knows? All these years, I have acted timidly all for the sake of some peace and quiet. But after this incident, I have decided. Even if I'm a good-for-nothing, I would be timid no more! The more timid I am, the more you guys will bully me!"

Everybody was struck by a sudden realization when they heard this.

No wonder this good-for-nothing would have the courage. She had been acting all along. That made perfect sense...

Bang!

Ling Yi pounded the table and jumped to his feet. He said coldly, "Gu Ruoyun, this old man has been a natural born protector of the weak. I don't care if you are right or wrong, you must kneel and beg for forgiveness today! If not, I don't care if you have a prodigy as a big brother, I will let you die here!!!"

Gu Ruoyun glanced at Ling Yi's furious face and smiled. "You want to pick on me, your junior? Aren't you worried that the entire Azure Dragon Country would say that you are picking on the weak?"

"Then, what do you want?"

"How about this? Let your grandson have a duel with me!"

Chapter 7: Good-For-Nothing (4)

What?

At that moment, everybody thought that she was crazy.

A Qi collection level two wanted to go up against a Qi collection level five? Was she sure she was not crazy?

"Grandpa, I agree to that!"

Not waiting for Ling Yi to speak, the Young Master of the Ling family stood up abruptly. He looked down at Gu Ruoyun who was a head shorter than him.

"Gu Ruoyun, this is you digging your own grave! I hereby accept your challenge, brace yourself!"

"Wait!"

Young Master Ling was just about to strike when a sudden yell disrupted him.

He retracted his hand and sneered, "What? Are you scared? If you're afraid, then kneel down, knock your head loudly on the the ground while calling out 'Grandfather' three times. I might just spare your life!"

Gu Ruoyun curled her lips in disdain. "If I were afraid, then I wouldn't have challenged you. However, the duel that I mentioned is not to be today, but after a month!"

"Haha!" Young Master Ling laughed loudly. "Gu Ruoyun, I get it. You want to live one more month. I am not an insensible person. I'll let you live for one more month. Grandpa, let's go. I'll come back and kill this good-for-nothing after a month. That'll save some rations for their household!"

His meaning was clear. I, Young Master Ling, will be killing Gu Ruoyun for the sake of the general's quarters. How wasteful it is to feed a good-for-nothing like this? So, the general quarters

shouldn't blame me but thank me instead!

Looking at the departing Young Master Ling's back, General Gu's expression was ghastly.

The way he saw it, it was fine if Gu Ruoyun died as long as it was not by his hands. But this good-for-nothing had the gall to challenge the Young Master of the Ling family to a duel! Wasn't this humiliating the household?

If it weren't for her, he wouldn't have been insulted by the Ling family!

"Hng!"

When he thought about this, General Gu took a deep breath. He shook his cuffs fiercely and walked straight out of the living room. He didn't even spare Gu Ruoyun a glance...

"Gu Ruoyun, you're too full of yourself."

Gu Panpan looked with disdain at Gu Ruoyun and she jeered, "You wishfully think to duel with the Young Master of the Ling family? Do you know who the Young Master of the Ling family is? His aunt is the most beloved concubine of the emperor, his master is the champion of Azure Dragon Country! With the champion of Azure Dragon Country as his master, do you think he'll be afraid of your brother?"

With that, Gu Panpan grunted, turned and left without sparing her another glance.

...

There was a breeze at the back of the mountain.

Gu Ruoyun was sitting on a rock, her eyes closed in deep thought.

Suddenly, she opened her eyes and a gleam flashed in her gaze like lightning.

"That's right, the Ancient Divine Pagoda. What happened to it..."

That day, if it weren't for the Ancient Divine Pagoda which stopped her, she would've died along with Xiaming and the others, and her soul would not be saved...

Now, she still had the chance to enter the East Peak mainland and avenge her mother and grandfather!

However, the Ancient Divine Pagoda had assimilated with her own body. How was she going to take it out?

"Bah! Let's just see exactly which part of my body is the Ancient Divine Pagoda in!"

Gu Ruoyun closed her eyes and let her spiritual sense scan her body.

It was at this moment that she realized her Spiritual Ocean was much wider than an ordinary person's.

As it was generally known, when a Martial Warrior began his cultivation, all of his Spiritual Force would be condensed into his Spiritual Ocean. Once the Spiritual Ocean was filled with Spiritual Force, the Martial Warrior could ascend to the next level.

The average Martial Warrior's Spiritual Ocean would only be the size of a bowl, but Gu Ruoyun's Spiritual Ocean was like the actual vast ocean. That was the reason why her cultivation had been slow to progress.

But there weren't any real Cultivators in Azure Dragon Country and they wouldn't know the advantages of having a vast Spiritual Ocean.

The more powerful you got, the more obstacles you would face. If you wished to break through these obstacles, then you needed the power of understanding of a Cultivator!

The wider the Spiritual Ocean, the stronger the power of understanding of the Martial Warrior. If the former her had a Spiritual Ocean this vast, she might have long surpassed the level of Martial Honour and reached Martial Supreme. Even in the East

Peak Mainland, the number of Martial Supremes were few and far between. Once a person reached this level, he could establish himself as Supreme Ruler.

You must know that the champion of Azure Dragon Country is only a high Martial General. It was plain to see just how powerful a Martial Supreme was...

"Hmm?"

Suddenly, Gu Ruoyun noticed a small and exquisite purple pagoda submerged in the Spiritual Ocean. Her heart was instantly filled with joy. "Ancient Divine Pagoda! I have finally found you..."

Hong!

A great shockwave traveled from within the Spiritual Ocean, striking right into Gu Ruoyun's head. The shock made her head buzz. When she came to her senses, a purple gown appeared in front of her...

Chapter 8: Ancient Phoenix, Zixie (1)

Gu Ruoyun's gaze traveled up the robe, stopped on the man's face and that moment, he was unable to turn away anymore.

In the East Peak Mainland, Supreme Jin was undoubtedly the most captivating among all the good-looking men that she has ever seen. But this man in front of her was no less handsome than Supreme Jin, but even better looking...

The man donned a purple long robe, with the sleeves decorated with golden lines, appearing dignified and resplendent. His black hair was lazily scattered behind him as a soft wind blew and with it, a charming scent lingered. His looks were so handsome that it seemed to have made all creation lose its color. The wind lifted the purple cuff, making the seductive purple flame in between the man's eyes seemed more sinister.

All of a sudden, the man raised his hand and a breeze swept past. When Gu Ruoyun regained her senses, she was already in the man's embrace...

"This is the master chosen by the Ancient Divine Pagoda? She's bony to the touch, not comfortable at all. Little girl, you need to replenish your nutrition and only when you've put on more weight, then you can warm my bed."

Gu Ruoyun's face darkened instantly. She raised a foot to kick him, but the man was already prepared. He grabbed her foot with a slight smile.

"Little girl, you were indeed strong in the past but now, you are only a small fry in the Qi collection level two. Do you think you can sneak up on me?"

Gu Ruoyun retracted her foot. She looked at the handsome dignified man in front of her and asked, "Who are you?"

"Little girl, you are too cold. I brought you all the way here from

the East Peak Mainland and you have forgotten about me?" The man continued reluctantly, "Luckily I saved your life that time. If it weren't for me, you would have been utterly destroyed, body and soul."

East Peak Mainland?

Gu Ruoyun was slightly startled, "You're the Ancient Divine Pagoda."

When he heard this, the man's lips twitched, "Ancient Divine Pagoda? Have you ever seen a pagoda turned into a man? I am the Ancient Divine Pagoda's companion beast, Zixie!"

"Zixie? Ancient Phoenix Zixie?"

The people of West Spirit Mainland may not know about Zixie's existence, but everyone in the East Peak Mainland knew that name.

Legend has it that The Ancient Phoenix Zixie held the power to break the heavens and earth. With just one breath, he can mow an empire to the ground. His power was so strong that it made everyone's heart trembled.

But Zixie had disappeared since tens of thousands of years ago. Who would've expected him to show up here...

"Girl, you're stunned aren't you?" Zixie curled his lips and smiled, "While you were running for your life, you had already made a contract with the Ancient Divine Pagoda. As long as your soul remains intact, the Ancient Divine Pagoda will follow your soul forever. But the bond between the Ancient Divine Pagoda and I has been sealed. If it was broken on the East Peak Mainland, those old demons would definitely have noticed it. Hence, I could not show myself and helped you. It wasn't until we reached the West Spirit Mainland that I was able to break the seal..."

Gu Ruoyun nodded, "I see. This Ancient Divine Pagoda was given to me by my grandfather, but I didn't know what it was for..."

"I won't be able to fully explain the uses of the Ancient Divine Pagoda to you in such a short time. However, you do know that the Divine Pagoda is an object left behind since ancient times right? How would an artifact from the ancient times be useless? Moreover..."

Zixie smilingly patted Gu Ruoyun's head, "Didn't you challenge someone? With this Ancient Divine Pagoda, I guarantee that within a month, I'll make you more powerful than him!"

He knew that with Gu Ruoyun's battle experience from her previous life, she would have had a fifty percent chance of defeating the young master of the Ling family. But what he intended to do was give her confidence that she can beat the enemy...

Chapter 9: Ancient Phoenix, Zixie (2)

Inside the Divine Pagoda, the walls were bare and only a drug tripod was placed in the center. Gu Ruoyun looked around at the empty Divine Pagoda and asked, "This is the Ancient Divine Pagoda?"

"That's right, this is the first floor of the Ancient Divine Pagoda. With my prowess, I can only unlock this first floor. From this point onwards, you will have to break the seals by yourself..."

"What should I do?"

Gu Ruoyun stopped in her tracks, turned and looked at Zixie.

"Easy," Zixie's gaze was upon Gu Ruoyun's face, he curled his lips into a faint smile, "If you can breakthrough Qi collection level eight and attain the level of Martial Warrior, then you can enter the second floor. With every floor that you breakthrough, you may obtain the object at that level."

When she heard this, her eyes turned towards the drug tripod.

"What the first floor has given me is this drug tripod?"

"Yes," Zixie nodded, "But, it's not only the drug tripod. There are also some basic pill recipes."

When he finished, he placed a few pill recipes in front of Gu Ruoyun.

"Qi Gathering Pills can help a Martial Warrior who is collecting Qi feel the Spiritual Energy around them better, helping them cultivate at five times more than their normal speed. Marrow Cleansing Pills can cleanse impurities inside the cultivator's body, making cultivation easier! Beauty Skin Changing Pills can make an old lady in her fifties instantly regain the splendor of a twenty-year-old..."

Ignoring the last one, Gu Ruoyun was very fascinated with the

first two types of Pills.

The most important part was, tens of thousands of years ago, the art of pill refining progressed massively and the number of pill refiners around was countless. However, during the Mainland War, every pill refiner was slaughtered and pill refining tomes were destroyed. As a result in the Mainland, nobody was able to refine a complete pill medicine. Even those sold in the market were powdered pill medicine.

However, those goods definitely could no longer be called pill medicine.

Needless to say, Gu Ruoyun was awed when she saw the pill recipes.

But she quickly calmed her excitement, which made Zixie look at her with surprise.

If it wasn't for anybody else, they would've wanted to try it straight away.

"Although these pill recipes are precious, but I have never learned pill refining. Even if you gave me the pill recipe and the drug tripod, I reckon that I won't be able to refine anything."

"Girl, you are unexpectedly different from the greedy humans that I usually meet. I am getting more and more interested in you," Zixie smiled. And with his smile, the purple flame in the middle of his brows appeared even more seductive, "I really hope that you would grow up faster so that you can warm my bed. If not, this small frame of yours will certainly stab me painfully."

Gu Ruoyun curled the corners of her lips, she scanned Zixie from head to toe, "Even if I do grow up, but you... Can you still grow?"

Looking at the young lady's smiling eyes, and upon reflecting upon the implied meaning of her words, the handsome face turned grave, "little girl, you are too young to be saying something like this."

"Don't forget, although this body is Gu Ruoyun's, I have already lived for twenty plus years."

"Is that so?"

Zixie's brows arched slightly, waved his big hand and pulled Gu Ruoyun into his embrace. A subtle threat emanated from his slightly squinted eyes, "Little girl, since your soul is in its twenties, then why don't you..... warm my bed now?"

The look on Gu Ruoyun's face sank. She wanted to retaliate, but the man's low and sinister laugh filled her ears.

"Too bad girl, I have no interest in bony women. They're not comfortable when you hug them. Wait 'till you're fatter, then I'll let you warm my bed."

Bang!

When the man let his guard down, Gu Ruoyun seized the moment to turn around and threw a punch towards the man's face. At that moment, a hand appeared in front of the man, blocking Gu Ruoyun's punch.

"Little girl, you are so cruel."

The man pushed aside Gu Ruoyun's fist and smiled helplessly, "You hit me when you want to without showing mercy. However, you have been inside the Divine Pagoda for quite some time. You should leave before anyone notices your absence. When you go out, buy the materials for the Qi Collecting Pill, I will then teach you how to refine it later."

Chapter 10: The Art of Refining Pills (1)

A light breeze blew and maple leaves fell slowly from the tips of the trees.

Gu Ruoyun had just descended the mountain when a reckless figure barged into her line of sight.

It was a young lady, about sixteen years of age. Her luxurious clothes nicely showcased her perfect body. However, when her gaze made its way to her face, she had no choice but to be disappointed.

The lady's fair skin was full of freckles, like spot stains on a clean white veil, greatly disrupting the original beauty.

Gu Ruoyun knitted her brows. She searched in her brain and recognized the lady in front of her.

However, before she could even open her mouth, Luo Yin walked hastily in front of her and scanned her from head to toe as if she did not know her.

"Gu Ruoyun, I heard that you will be dueling that rabbit bastard of the Ling family?"

Gu Ruoyun stroked her own wrists and smiled noncommittally.

"News sure travels fast. What? You think I would lose too?"

"Haha!"

Luo Yin laughed loudly while tapping on Gu Ruoyun's shoulders. "What kind of person are you, Gu Ruoyun? I have said before that your father was the first genius of Azure Dragon Country. Alas, those whom the gods love die young and he passed away at such a young age! But your brother, he's the current first genius! As the daughter of Gu Tian, the younger sister of Gu Shengxiao, how can you be a good-for-nothing? But, Gu Ruoyun, after being friends for so many years, you kept this secret even from me?"

Right then, word had been spreading like wildfire that Gu Ruoyun had faked her timidity all along to make everybody forget about her. But being Gu Ruoyun's best and only friend, even she had been kept in the dark for so many years.

When she thought of this, Luo Yin was all sorts of upset.

"Luo Yin." Gu Ruoyun looked at her old friend and hesitated for a while. "I have a favor to ask."

"What?"

"Can you...lend me some gold coins?" Gu Ruoyun was a bit embarrassed to say that out loud.

In her previous life, she was the direct Young Mistress of the Xia family, so she had never fretted over these worldly objects. But because Gu Ruoyun was a good-for-nothing, her monthly allowance was a mere three copper coins. She could not afford to buy herbs.

"Alright, how much do you want?" Luo Yin agreed without even thinking.

Gu Ruoyun thought deeply for a moment, then lifted her head and looked at the freckle-faced Luo Yin steadily. "I need a hundred gold coins! In return, I will give you a reward richer than a hundred gold coins!"

She, Gu Ruoyun, had never liked to be indebted to anyone.

That's why before she even borrowed money, she had decided to use the Qi Gathering Pills as repayment! The price of these Qi Gathering Pills was much higher than a hundred gold coins!

"A hundred gold coins?"

Luo Yin had initially thought that even if Gu Ruoyun wanted to borrow money, she would only borrow a few gold coins. She didn't expect her to ask so much. To her, a hundred gold coins were her year's savings.

But Luo Yin understood. If she could help it, she absolutely wouldn't open her mouth to borrow money, knowing Gu Ruoyun's self-esteem.

"Alright, I'll lend you the money. Wait for me here, I'll go fetch it! About the reward, you don't have that many gold coins to repay me, so there's no need to repay me."

Little did she know what the reward that Gu Ruoyun mentioned was. The moment she saw it, she would know that her friend wasn't bragging...

The value of one Qi Gathering Pill was much higher than a hundred gold coins!

Chapter 11: Pill Refinement (2)

The Hundred Herb Hall was the biggest medicinal hall in the Azure Dragon Country. Here, there were only unwanted herbs; however, there would not be any herb that you cannot purchase.

Currently, a grey-haired old man sat inside the Hundred Herb Hall with his eyes closed, silently resting. Suddenly, light footsteps echoed from outside the door. The old man opened his eyes and his gaze fell upon the young maiden stepping into the medicinal hall.

This young maiden was very slim, and she adorned an oversized grey-colored cloth gown which hung unflatteringly over her skinny and weak frame. Her skin was fair, a beautiful and pleasant shade of ivory white, which was easy to remember over a single glance.

However, the old man took a brief glance at her and continued to close his eyes.

"Young lady, may I know what might you be looking for?"

The shopkeeper, upon seeing a customer, quickly went forward and asked with a smile.

"I can guarantee that the Hundred Herb Hall is the biggest medicinal hall in the country. No matter what kind of herb it is that you are looking for, we are able to provide it to you. Even if it is a thousand-year-old ginseng, our men can find it for you."

"I do not need a thousand-year-old ginseng. However, I would like to have all the herbs listed on this prescription."

Gu Ruoyun then handed over the prescription to the shopkeeper.

The shopkeeper took at the list of herbs on the prescription and smiled, "Young lady, these are very commonly found herbs. Kindly wait for a moment, I will go fetch them now."

"Alright."

Gu Ruoyun nodded and took a look around the medicinal hall. Her gaze fell upon the old man who was resting with his eyes closed. An obscure glint flashed across her clear eyes.

This old man's power was not ordinary. He is in the very least at the level of the Martial King. Cultivators such as this was one of the best in Azure Dragon Country. How did he end up being a resident physician in the Hundred Herb Hall?

It seems like the Hundred Herb Hall came from a mighty background, much mightier than she had imagined...

"Hey! What kind of herb is the Hundred Herb Hall selling? You clearly said that this herb could heal the scar on my neck, why did it not have any effect on me after applying it?"

A luxuriously dressed lady stood in front of the counter and slammed the table aggressively. She was indeed very beautiful, with creamy skin and crescent moon eyebrows. Her bright eyes shone like the moonlight in a pitch black night. However, at this very moment, she was spurning flames of fury.

On the lady's snow-white neck, an obvious scratch had marred its original beauty, a blemish in her otherwise perfect appearance.

"Young lady, you have only been using this medicine for a single day, how could it have any effect?"

The shopkeeper let slip a look helplessness, but showed no fear. He then patiently explained, "You have to go back and apply it continuously for half a month, then only will it heal and recover to your original skin tone."

"I do not care!" The luxuriously-dressed lady held up her head and puffed her chest. She grunted without sparing a glance, "Do you have any idea who I am? The Imperial Concubine is my aunt! If you make me angry, I will ask my aunt to issue an order to drive your Hundred Herb Hall out of the Azure Dragon Country!"

The Imperial Concubine?

Gu Ruoyun was slightly startled. This lady was a member of the Ling family. No wonder she was acting in such an overbearing arrogant manner.

One must know, that the Hundred Herb Hall was powerful held in high regard not only in the Azure Dragon Country, but also in other countries. This lady had dared to threaten to drive the Hundred Herb Hall out of the Azure Dragon Country; even the Imperial Concubine herself might not have the courage to do that.

However, Ling Yu had not given it much thought. In her eyes, the Hundred Herb Hall was just another regular merchant enterprise. They would not dare to oppose royalty no matter how powerful they were.

"You speak foolishly and much too boldly, young lady."

The old man who was silently resting slowly opened his eyes. Upon hearing his voice, the shopkeeper could not help but let out a relieved sigh. He said respectfully, "Elder Yu, this issue..."

Chapter 12: Pill Refinement (3)

Elder Yu did not reply the shopkeeper. Instead, his intelligent eyes stared deeply at Ling Yu, "Young lady, in the Hundred Herb Hall, it doesn't matter if you're a commoner or a courtier, there are no exceptions! If you insist on comparing your higher ranking to us, then the Hundred Herb Hall would not welcome you any longer!"

"You..."

Ling Yu was angered until her face went pale. Since the Ling family was far more superior these days, she did not expect that a mere physician would dare to talk to her like that! That was going too far!

"Fine. You guys better remember this. If I, Ling Yu, do not have my revenge, I swear to never be reborn as a human again! When the time comes, don't say that I didn't warn you!"

However, after she said that, Elder Yu closed his eyes once more. Even when Ling Yu was stamping with rage, he did not spare her another glance...

"Young lady, I'm terribly sorry to have you wait longer. I'll go fetch the herbs now."

The shopkeeper said shamefully after Ling Yu left.

"Shopkeeper, is this the resident physician of Hundred Herb Hall?"

Gu Ruoyun's gaze scanned the place and stopped on Elder Yu. The corners of her lips curled into a faint smile as she asked.

"This..." Shopkeeper Zhao was slightly stunned, he carefully peeked at the old man who was closing his eyes to rest his spirit. He saw that the old man did not give any reaction, and continued, "Young lady, this is our senior, Elder Yu. He's also... our physician."

"Oh," as Gu Ruoyun stroked her chin, "I see that he's not very skilled. If not, how can he not fix a simple scar?"

"What did you say?"

Elder Yu opened his eyes fiercely and snorted, "A simple scar? You make it sound so easy! If it is merely removing the scar, then it is not a difficult thing; but to fix it on the same day, that is impossible. Wound or illness, they all need time to heal."

"If you don't have the skills then you don't have it. Why don't you just admit it?"

"Young lady!"

Seeing that Elder Yu's expression was getting darker and darker, Shopkeeper Zhao hurriedly interrupted Gu Ruoyun, "Young lady, please say no more. Elder Yu's skills are the best, even the royal doctors are no match for him."

"Is that so?" Gu Ruoyun snickered. A subtle glint flashed across her clear eyes, "If Elder Yu's medical skills are that great, I wonder if he'll be willing to have a match with this junior?"

"Alright!"

Elder Yu hit the table and jumped to his feet. He stared coldly at Gu Ruoyun, "What kind of match do you have in mind?"

"Easy! If I lose, I won't only apologise but I'll also recognise your medical skills as the greatest under the heavens. If you lose, then... I want this Hundred Herb Hall to be mine."

Gu Ruoyun waved her cuff and sat down. Her delicate and pretty face wore a confident smile.

Elder Yu was stunned for a while. He laughed loudly, "Girl, you have a big mouth. With just one bite and you want this whole Hundred Herb Hall to yourself! You still do not have what it takes to obtain Hundred Herb Hall!"

"What?" Gu Ruoyun toyed with her hair, "The great Hundred

Herb Hall isn't brave enough to have a match with a little girl like me? Or are you afraid of losing, Elder Yu?"

"Losing? Humph. I, Elder Yu have never known the meaning of losing! The only thing is that this Hundred Herb Hall isn't mine, I cannot make any decisions. If you truly want to have a match with me, let me decide after talking to the Little Lord."

Truth be told, Gu Ruoyun could guess Elder Yu's identity based on the shopkeeper's attitude towards him that he was not an ordinary physician. But no matter how powerful he was in the Hundred Herb Hall, he was at most a supervisor or an elder. Her aim was to get the people behind Hundred Herb Hall.

Not to mention since she was new here, she must have a power to back her up!

Hundred Herb Hall was undoubtedly the best choice!

The most important part was that after she has conquered Hundred Herb Hall, she wouldn't have to worry about herbs anymore.

Chapter 13: Pill Refinement (4)

In front of an exquisitely ornate window pane, a man stood with his back against the door. A light breeze gently encircled the room, softly brushing through the man's inky black hair.

As if sensing the footsteps from outside the door, he gently tilted his head. The bright rays of sunlight shone upon the man's handsome face, casting a far more mesmerizing sight than the sunlight outside the window.

The door pushed open, and Elder Yu slowly entered the room. He bowed his head and spoke respectfully, "Young Master, I have something to report."

The man gently raised his hand and stopped the old man before he could continue speaking.

He curled the corners of his lips into an attractive angle. His gentle eyes shone like enchanting black pools, so beautiful that they could generate ripples in the hearts of many.

"Elder Yu, there's no need for an explanation. I've seen everything that has happened downstairs. This Gu Ruoyun, it seems that she is not as fragile as they say. At least, I can't detect any sign of weakness or cowardice in her..."

No one in Azure Dragon country did not know that the genius of that generation, Gu Tian had given birth to a good-for-nothing, gifted with stupidity, cowardly and afraid of everything daughter. Not only was she a humiliation to his name, she was the shame of General Gu's household. Based on his observations, the rumors weren't true. That girl was so overbearing. What part of her resembled a coward?

I simply don't know where these rumors came from. He thought.

"Gu Ruoyun?" Elder Yu's mouth fell open in shock, "Young Master, are you saying that she is Gu Tian and Lady Yu'er's

daughter, Gu Ruoyun?"

"Precisely," The man gently stroked the bamboo leaves next to him with his slender fingers, his lips held an unreadable smile. "There aren't many people whom I admire. Gu Tian is one of those people. He had the capability to grow into such great strength, under such weak circumstances. If he was born into a powerful organization, he would now be among the greatest cultivators in all of the mainland. Both he and my sister were a match made in heaven. Unfortunately, some people made the decision to tear them apart."

The man sighed at the thought of this, and spoke with a hint of regret in his voice, "Now that we're discussing it, that Gu Ruoyun should address me as her uncle. But I've heard talk in the family that this Gu Ruoyun is extremely useless, and can't even be compared with Gu Tian. My visit this time is for her sake! Elder Yu, the Hundred Herb Hall is only one of my businesses; losing it is equivalent to losing a few pieces of gold. Hence, I approve of your notion in utilizing the Hundred Herb Hall as part of your wager. However, it does not mean that just because she is Gu Tian's daughter, you should go easy on her. I want to see her true capabilities..."

How could a great genius like Gu Tian have possibly given birth to a good-for-nothing daughter? He wondered.

So, I want to find out if this girl has the ability to single-handedly conquer the heavens!

...

Downstairs, Gu Ruoyun heard the sound of footsteps descending from above. She lightly raised her eyebrows, sweeping her gaze towards Elder Yu, who was hobbling hurriedly downstairs.

"So how was it? Does your Young Master agree to my suggestion?"

Once he found out about Gu Ruoyun's true identity, Elder Yu began to feel a complex mix of emotions. He had never thought that this girl would turn out to be the daughter of Gu Tian and the precious pearl of the Dongfang Family. Should he ever offend her, then in the future...

Even though the Young Master left instructions to not take it easy with her, but it shouldn't be a problem if I lightened the load for her a little, right?

"Cough! Cough!"

Elder Yu's eyes darted back and forth at the thought of this. He let out a dry cough and said, "My lady, how should we go about this competition?"

"It's simple!" Gu Ruoyun raised her lips to an angle, "Elder Yu, I hear that your throat is hoarse, it is an old affliction?"

Elder Yu was momentarily stunned, and nodded honestly, "That's right. That year, I was locked in battle with a strong cultivator, and was gravely injured which caused damage to my throat. While I've managed to save myself with my herbs, I was never able to heal my throat to its original state."

Chapter 14: Pill Refinement (5)

"What if I told you that I could heal your throat completely?"

Gu Ruoyun smiled and her clear, bright eyes shone with confidence.

Hearing this, Elder Yu burst out laughing, "Even I am incapable of healing my wound. If such a young lady like you truly have such an ability, you deserve my respect!"

Even an idiot could hear the sarcasm in Elder Yu's voice.

I intended on taking it easy on her in this wager, but it seems that this little girl is arrogant and conceited, he thought. If I don't teach her a lesson, it would be detrimental to her personal growth in the future.

Gu Ruoyun thought nothing of it, only smiled and said, "If you don't believe me, I can administer your medication. I only need a specific type of medication, and you'll be cured in half an hour. Of course, if I'm able to successfully heal a wound that you yourself could not cure, it shows that you've lost and the Hundred Herb Hall shall belong to me."

"Alright!" Elder Yu laughed mockingly, "Since you want to gamble, then I'll entertain you. Take whatever herbs you need from the Hundred Herb Hall. I don't believe that any medicine could possibly work within a day. This simply defies common sense."

Gu Ruoyun said nothing, only smiled. She took a piece of paper and listed down over ten types of herbs, and handed the paper to Shopkeeper Zhao, "Please take these herbs, boil them in a pot and serve the mixture to Elder Yu. I guarantee that within half an hour, he'll be free of his affliction."

In her past life, it was true that Gu Ruoyun had no experience in pill refinement, but she sought tutelage in medicine from a famous

doctor. That doctor was well-known throughout the East Peak Mainland, even far more superior than those of the West Spirit Mainland.

And she was his favorite disciple. So naturally, he taught her everything he knew.

Shopkeeper Zhao held the list of ingredients in his hand, and glanced at Elder Yu. Upon seeing his nod of approval, Shopkeeper Zhao promptly scurried off to collect the herbs.

"Young lady," Elder Yu frowned, paused in silence, then spoke, "Even though I'm not particularly fond of your conceited attitude, there is something I must warn you about."

"What is it?"

"Beware of the Gu Family!"

At this moment, a never-before-seen wave of seriousness took over Elder Yu's face, making Gu Ruoyun feel very uncomfortable.

"Why would you say that?"

"The Gu Family is not as simple as you think it is," Elder Yu raised his head towards Gu Ruoyun, "If the rumors about you are true, perhaps I would not say this to you. But from what I can tell, you are not a weak or useless good-for-nothing! You may be a bit egotistical, but you are also smart! Your father's death may have had something to do with the Gu Family..."

Gu Ruoyun's heart trembled, slowly clenching her hand into a fist. She then took a deep breath and relaxed.

"Elder Yu, did you know my father?"

"No," Elder Yu shook his head, "I never knew your father, I only admired him. He was a real man who was willing to protect the woman he loved at any cost! Unfortunately, the heavens were envious of such great talent, and geniuses will always suffer the wrath of the envious. That is all I can tell you, little girl. Whether

you want to believe me or not, that is entirely up to you."

Actually, Elder Yu dearly wished to reveal her true identity to her. But he knew that it was not his place to do so.

The Dongfang Family is indeed powerful, and geniuses in the family were as many as the number of hairs on a cow. Not just anyone had the rights to enter the family. Years ago, Gu Tian's approval from the Dongfang Family was simply because his innate talent far surpassed the rest.

Unless Gu Ruoyun was just as talented as her father, the Dongfang Family would never accept her...

"Elder Yu, regardless of your relationship with my father, I just want to say, thank you for your warning. But in some matters... I have a pretty good grasp on what's going on."

The Gu Family were a snobbish bunch of people. That was why they placed great value towards their family member's abilities.

If what Elder Yu says is true, then why would the Gu Family do such a thing? She wondered, If he was trying to deceive me, what are his motives?

Chapter 15: Pill Refinement (6)

Just as she was deep in thought, Shopkeeper Zhao entered the room, holding a bowl of medicine in his hands. Elder Yu felt a twinge of hesitation as he stared at the dark black liquid. But in the end, he raised his head and poured it into his mouth.

A cooling sensation slowly flowed down his throat, giving him an indescribably comfortable feeling. As if his mouth was completely filled with the fragrance of chrysanthemums, gently lubricating his throat...

The minutes and seconds rolled on...

Elder Yu could feel his throat making a gradual yet obvious recovery. He could already feel the moisture in the walls of his throat — a sensation he never had since his injury...

"Little girl, this medicine is too miraculous. This old man admits his defeat!" Elder Yu smacked his lips and praised glowingly, "May I ask, who taught you such great medical skills?"

"My master prefers to live in anonymity, I cannot reveal his name so casually."

Because even if I told you his name, you would not have recognized it. She thought, "That old man is not even from the West Spirit Mainland. But I wonder what suffering my Master had to endure, upon receiving news of my death..."

"Oh," Elder Yu sighed, "Little girl, I concede my defeat in our wager. The Hundred Herb Hall now belongs to you. And I, am your humble slave!"

This time, he sincerely accepted his defeat without any complaints.

"Alright. However, I do not wish to enslave you. I only ask that you help take care of the Hundred Herb Hall in my stead, Elder Yu. For now, I will not reveal myself to the world. I'll leave it to you to

manage the everyday matters. There is also no need for anyone to know of my status as the Master of the Hundred Herb Hall. A tall tree attracts the wind. I do not wish to attract attention so soon."

Gu Ruoyun nodded with satisfaction. She did not expect to collect such a huge windfall after stepping out of the house. With a large business like the Hundred Herb hall in the palms of her hands, she would never need to worry about medicinal herbs anymore. Her road to greatness will be a lot smoother from now on.

At the time, Gu Ruoyun did not know this but the Hundred Herb Hall would play a significant role in her path to greatness. It would also be with her every step of the way from her time as a weak little girl, to a strong and powerful woman as she slowly entered the pinnacle of greatness on the mainland...

In the great hall of the Ling Family residence, Ling Yi was in a dreadful rage. He glared resentfully at the luxuriously-dressed woman before him.

"Ling Yu, you've really done it this time! Sigh!"

Ling Yu's mouth twitched, and replied nonchalantly, "Isn't it just a small medicinal store? What's the big deal? My aunt is the imperial concubine. Grandfather, you must dispatch your men and have them trample over that Hundred Herb Hall at once. Honestly, the Crown Prince's birthday celebration is only a few days away. I need to meet the Crown Prince, and I still have this ugly scar!"

"Just a small medicinal store?"

Peng!

Ling Yi crumpled onto his chair, with a bitter and impatient smile on his face, "The Hundred Herb Hall may be a medicinal store, but even the Emperor Himself wouldn't dare lay a hand on it. Yet you dare spout such words? Tomorrow, you shall come with me to the Hundred Herb Hall and apologize. Otherwise, not even

your imperial concubine aunt can save you!"

Ling Yu was speechless, It's only an ordinary merchant's store. Why should grandfather feel so afraid? Even my Imperial Uncle, the Emperor does not dare lay a hand on the Hundred Herb hall? How could this be?

But Ling Yu knew that her grandfather was still fuming with rage, so she did not dare say another word. After all, in the entire Ling household, the only person she feared most was the head of the family — her grandfather...

Chapter 16: Pill Refinement (7)

"Zixie, I've collected the necessary herbs to refine Qi Gathering Pills. When are you going to start my pill refining lessons?"

In the Ancient Divine Pagoda, Gu Ruoyun stood over the medicine cauldron and placed the medicinal herbs from the Hundred Herb Hall before her. She then turned her head to face the man next to her.

Zixie gently stroked his chin with his slender fingers, and smiled demonically, "It begins now! Start the preparations, girl. I will teach you the art of refining pills after that."

"Alright."

Gu Ruoyun lightly nodded her head. At that moment, to say that she did not feel excited would be a lie. After all, this was the long lost art of refining pills...

"In the art of refining pills, girl, you must follow the exact steps of the pill formula accurately and place the herbs into the cauldron in the correct order. If the order is incorrect, the pill refining process will be a failure. Once your powers are stable, you may try creating new pills based on the properties of the herbs. Of course, this probably won't happen until you've had a few years of experience," Zixie explained with a smile in his eyes, "Actually, pill refining isn't very difficult. Unfortunately, I am no human. So I cannot refine pills. Now, you can try practicing for a bit. You must not make any mistakes, be it the task of watching the fire or the correct order of the herbs — it all must be done in total accuracy. One false move and the pill will be ruined! Never forget that."

Hearing this, Gu Ruoyun's expression grew serious.

She took a deep breath, her dark eyes sparkled with resolve...

"Pills, if I had such legendary items in my possession in my past life, perhaps then I could've changed my little brother's inability

to cultivate. And that man wouldn't have cruelly abandoned the Xia Family's only son! If... If my little brother was reborn into this world like I was, I will definitely change his life!"

Pills have always been considered all-powerful. If she were a pill master in her past life, her little brother would never have had such a tragic death.

Alas...

The image of the young boy, lying in a pool of blood appeared in her mind's eye. Gu Ruoyun's heart throbbed with anguish, but was soon replaced with a burst of sheer determination.

"Yu'er, if you're still alive, your elder sister will find you. If you are truly gone... Then, I will continue to live on for your sake. I'll live on to avenge our mother! This was also your dying wish so don't you worry. Wait for me to gain my powers, then we shall return to the East Peak Mainland, and make that man pay for the price of blood, with blood! I will not rest until he falls into the pit of eternal damnation!"

Zixie observed the hatred on the young girl's pretty face. His lips gently curled into an angle.

Hatred, he mused, Can grant speed in a person's growth. I am truly looking forward to the day when she's fully grown in power...

Perhaps I would not have to wait for too long.

...

The blazing flames lit up the entire room. The young girl fixed her gaze upon the pill cauldron, and slowly placed the herbs inside. Then, just as she placed the herbs inside, a loud bang was heard and it was followed by a ringing noise resounded from within the cauldron. Suddenly, a cloud of grey smoke burst out from within, covering the girl's face in a layer of ashes.

Zixie glanced at Gu Ruoyun and shook his head, "Pill refining is

an extremely sacred profession, little girl. When refining pills, you must not have any distractions. A single thread of loose thought is enough to make you lose control."

"I understand. Let's do it again!"

Gu Ruoyun took a deep breath and took out the herbs again...

Due to the fact that Gu Ruoyun's presence was most easily overlooked in the entire Gu household, she saw no problem in casually disappearing for three days and three nights. After all, in the past, even if she disappeared for a month, no one would come looking for her.

However, this time, the entire Gu Family was in an uproar...

Chapter 17: The Grave And Stern Crown Prince (1)

There wasn't really any other reason besides the fact that the Crown Prince's birthday celebration was tomorrow. If Gu Ruoyun were the same good-for-nothing that she used to be in the past, it would not have mattered whether she attended the party or not. But now, the situation was different.

This time, the Crown Prince's Master, a member of the Weapon Refining Sect would be in attendance. He would be testing the abilities of the younger generation, and those who passed would be chosen to enter the Weapon Refining Sect as an outer disciple.

One should know that the Weapon Refining Sect held a seat of great power in the mainland, and the only ones who did not fear them was the Dongfang Family. It was because of this that should anyone be accepted into the Weapon Refining Sect, he would be envied, even if he were only an outer disciple.

Hence, His Imperial Majesty issued a decree that everyone, no matter who they were, must attend the Crown Prince's birthday celebration.

For this reason, General Gu was forced to send his men to find Gu Ruoyun.

Of course, under normal circumstances, a powerful organization like the Weapon Refining Sect would not even consider a recruitment, unless someone were as talented as the Crown Prince. So, this time, even General Gu did not know the true motives of the Weapon Refining Sect.

But regardless of how much fuss the Gu Family was making, Gu Ruoyun, who was still inside the Ancient Divine Pagoda, was blissfully unaware of the situation in the world outside. At that moment, her attention was fixed upon the pill cauldron in front of

her. The crackling flames reflected in her clear, cold eyes.

Faint streams of steam escaped from the top of the pill cauldron, bringing a fresh, cooling sensation into the surroundings. In that moment, Gu Ruoyun clearly felt the spiritual energy around her thicken.

"The final step in pill refinement...is forming the pill, girl! During this process, most medicine cauldrons will release a strong pressure. You must control it. If you fail, you'll have to start all over again."

The man's low voice rang aloud in Gu Ruoyun's ear. She took a deep breath, her eyes filled with total concentration.

Forming the pills...This was the final step in refining pills and was also the most important step. Should this fail, all her efforts would have been for naught...

Bang!

Bang bang bang!

Suddenly, a strong force rammed against the medicine cauldron, causing the ground to shake.

Gu Ruoyun stumbled a few steps back. Just then, the medicine cauldron tipped, falling over from where it was hovering from above the ground. Her heart trembled, and she rushed to take control of the medicine cauldron.

Cold sweat slowly rolled down the young girl's pretty face. However, she did not dare lose focus. Her entire being tightened with concentration. But because she was far too nervous, her frail, little face grew as white as a sheet.

Finally, just as Gu Ruoyun was about to lose control, the medicine cauldron stopped shaking, and settled quietly on its base...

"I did it! I've finally done it!"

Gu Ruoyun suppressed the excitement she felt, and stepped forward to uncover the cauldron with impatience. She reached into the bottom of the cauldron and drew out a string of five pills.

"You've managed to learn the art of refining pills in just three days, little girl. That alone makes you worthy enough to be considered a genius. But, you are the Master of the Ancient Divine Pagoda. So, this one bit of talent will not be enough for you. However, you need not rush into pill refinement. You can take your time."

Zixie observed the frail little girl before him as his purple eyes lit up with a smile and an unshakeable resolve filled his face.

"You must remember, in this world, it's survival of the fittest. If you want to live and protect the ones you love, then you must stand at the pinnacle of prestige, where you will be untouchable!"

To stand on the pinnacle of the mainland, and be worshipped and served by the world. That was the prestige that the Master of the Ancient Divine Pagoda deserved.

Chapter 18: The Grave And Stern Crown Prince (2)

Gu Ruoyun laughed cynically. "How could I not understand what you mean? It was my weakness that brought upon the violent deaths of my mother, maternal grandfather and my little brother, causing my loved ones to leave me behind, one by one! Seeing as the heavens chose to spare my life, I must become the ruler of the world! I shall dictate who deserves to live or die!"

As she spoke, the young girl's voice grew with dominance, illuminating her normally inconspicuous face.

Zixie smiled and stroked Gu Ruoyun's hair. "Little girl, you must first consume this Qi Gathering pill and breakthrough to level 3 of the Qi Collection Ranks before you leave."

"Alright."

A glint flashed across Gu Ruoyun's eyes. She had a strong feeling that she would breakthrough to level three once she consumed the Qi Gathering pill...

A sleepless night.

By the time Gu Ruoyun finally appeared before the eyes of the Gu Family, it was the eleventh hour. The Gu Family members, who had long wished for her to stay far away, have never looked forward to her return as much as they did today.

General Gu simply could not be bothered to say too much to her. He shot her a lukewarm glance and barked, "The cultivators from the Weapon Refining Sect have already arrived in the Imperial Palace. His Imperial Highness has issued an order — that everyone must attend the Crown Prince's birthday celebration. There's no time for you to clean up now. You will leave with us immediately."

Actually, Gu Ruoyun herself wasn't too clear about the situation. However, because she felt curious about the standards of the

cultivators of this mainland, she did not defy General Gu's orders.

In a room filled with a faint fragrant scent, a man stood with his hands behind his back. The faint glow of sunlight poured down upon his figure, casting a long shadow behind his back.

Elder Yu stood behind the Young Master of his house, watching him. He hesitated before he spoke, "Young Master, two elders from the Weapon Refining Sect have arrived in Azure Dragon Country. I'm not sure why... While the Crown Prince of Azure Dragon Country may be Elder Hunfei's disciple, he would never attend a gathering for no good reason, knowing his haughty attitude. Besides, even Elder Tianling and the Sect Master's daughter have tagged along. I cannot shake this feeling...that something is about to happen."

The man raised his head gently. "Regardless of their reasons, it has nothing to do with the Dongfang Family. However, I remember Elder Hunfei eyeing Gu Shengxiao due to his talent, yet Shengxiao rejected him. Only then was the Crown Prince accepted as his disciple."

"Young Master, are you saying that he might cause trouble for Lady Ruoyun?"

"No." The man shook his head. "The Weapon Refining Sect still holds some level of prestige in the mainland. They can't do things like this. That's right, Elder Yu, I will be returning to the Dongfang Family home soon. You will stay here and help Gu Ruoyun."

Elder Yu was stunned, his elderly face showing a hint of astonishment.

"Young Master, this..."

"Elder Yu, you've always known that I initially established the Hundred Herb Hall as an extra source of funds for myself. But if the Hundred Herb Hall can aid Gu Ruoyun in her quest to greatness, then what's the harm in giving it to her? Besides, she is

the daughter of my elder sister. I've asked you to stay because I want you to observe her true potential. If she has none, you will return to the Dongfang Family home, without any need for her permission. Instead of involving her in our internal disputes, why not let her live a life free of burden?"

There was a hint of helplessness in the man's voice.

Elder Yu lowered his head and replied respectfully, "Yes, Young Master. Your old servant shall follow your commands."

...

"Ruoyun!"

In the Imperial Gardens. Luo Yin spotted Gu Ruoyun, who was trailing behind the Gu Family members, in a single glance, and felt instant joy. She rushed towards Gu Ruoyun, completely ignoring the fact that General Luo, who was right next to her, was glaring fiercely at her.

Chapter 19: The Grave And Stern Crown Prince (3)

Everyone knew that the Masters of the Luo Family and the Gu Family, the Right General and the Left General respectively, had never gotten along. However, the Lady of the Luo Family, Luo Yin, was a kindred spirit of the good-for-nothing Gu Ruoyun. She had even gone to the extent of standing up for her, several times.

But Luo Yin's voice was loud enough to successfully attract the attention of everyone in the room towards Gu Ruoyun.

"Gu Ruoyun, of the Gu Family? Isn't she that infamous good-for-nothing of Azure Dragon Country? Even if a citizen of Azure Dragon Country has never heard of Gu Shengxiao, they would have definitely heard of Gu Ruoyun. Besides, I've heard that she's boldly challenged the lordling of the Ling Family to a duel."

"Tsk tsk, the lordling of the Ling Family is a level five in the Qi Collection ranks. But I've heard that this Gu Ruoyun has been stuck at level two for many years."

"Even though His Imperial Highness granted permission for the officials to bring their children to the celebration, a good-for-nothing like Gu Ruoyun shouldn't have the right to show her face, should she?"

Hearing the mockery from the crowd, General Gu's face turned from red to white, wishing that he could kill this good-for-nothing Gu Ruoyun in one slap. That would be better than facing the humiliation here!

Luo Yin was just about to lash out at them, until a hand reached out and gently stopped her.

She was momentarily stunned, and turned around towards the young girl's calm visage.

"Let it go, let them talk. Besides, it's not like I'll lose anything."

Gu Ruoyun shook her head, with a disapproving tone in her voice.

For example, would an elephant care about the chatter of ants?

The previous Gu Ruoyun, was that elephant.

"Announcing the arrival of His Royal Highness, the Crown Prince and the Imperial Concubine!"

Just then, a loud, crafty voice was heard, drawing the attention of the crowd.

Amidst the gaze of the crowd, a figure clothed in yellow made its way into the room, slowly coming into view...

It was an extremely handsome man. His features were stern and deep, with eyes like bottomless pools of black ink, shielding his thoughts from others.

When the crowd's eyes fell upon the young woman in yellow next to him, they finally understood the meaning of the phrase "as pretty as a picture" and "a beauty that can cause the downfall of cities". But even though her features were breathtaking, her face was unusually white. No amount of rouge could conceal her sickly pallor.

But because she appeared with the Crown Prince, everyone knew exactly who she was.

Especially since the Imperial Concubine Ling walked behind them both! This made the crowd feel even more suspicious...

"Greetings, Your Royal Highness, Lady Imperial Concubine."

Once the crowd regained their senses, they knelt on the ground in a uniformed fashion, and greeted them respectfully.

As such, Gu Ruoyun, who remained standing in the midst of the crowd, stuck out like a sore thumb...

"Gu Ruoyun, when greeting the Crown Prince and the Imperial Concubine, you will kneel immediately!" General Gu frowned, chastising her angrily.

"My apologies." Gu Ruoyun shrugged her shoulders. "My legs developed hemorrhoids so it's a bit difficult for me to kneel. Next time, I'll definitely make it up to His Royal Highness and the Imperial Concubine."

Hemorrhoids?

General Gu nearly lost control, dearly wishing he could get up and violently punch the girl. "Hemorrhoids developing on knees?" He fumed internally, "In all the sixty years of my f*cking life, this is the first time I've heard of anyone developing hemorrhoids on their knees, I've certainly gained a new experience."

"Hehe." Concubine Ling raised her lips into a smile, shooting a sharp gaze towards Gu Ruoyun. "This must be Gu Ruoyun, of the Gu Family? Your reputation precedes you. The rumors don't live up to the real thing. I've even heard that you've challenged my nephew to a duel, is that true?"

This duel was not exactly a secret in Azure Dragon Country, but hearing this directly from Imperial Concubine Ling's mouth certainly gave it a different flavor.

"That's right." Gu Ruoyun raised her head towards Imperial Concubine Ling, "I will defeat Ling Xi!"

Chapter 20: The Grave And Stern Crown Prince (4)

Pfft!

No one knew where the laughter started, but soon, the entire crowd burst out laughing as if they had not heard of such a funny joke in a long time.

"Gu Ruoyun, don't be a savage!" The Little Master of the Ling Family leapt in his fury, and yelled, "If I don't beat you until you kneel and call me Daddy, then I'll take on your surname!"

This damned woman, she was actually humiliating him in public. That's great, just great. I will make her die spectacularly! The Little Master Ling gritted his teeth hatefully as if he dearly wished to grind Gu Ruoyun's bones into dust.

"I'll f*ck your mother! Ling Xi, who is going to be f*cking forced to kneel before you and call you her daddy?" Luo Yin could no longer control herself. She swiftly rose from the ground and screamed, "Even if Gu Ruoyun is defeated, I'm still here. Come at me if you have the balls! What are you trying to prove by bullying someone weaker than you?"

Ling Xi was about to argue with her until he suddenly met with General Luo's dangerous glare.

Honestly, besides his own grandfather, the only other person that Ling Xi feared most, was this burly general.

Although both General Luo and General Gu were generals, the latter was never one to stir up trouble. The former...was completely fearless!

He was particularly famous for being wrapped around his daughter's finger.

Anyone who bullied his daughter would be beaten to a pulp, even

if you were a relative of the Emperor himself! Once, the son of the Minister of War called Luo Yin "ugly", and General Luo immediately rushed to his door and beat him until he was nearly disabled.

The Emperor was not really an incapable ruler. Hence, he would not possibly revoke him of his military title, simply because of this. After all, General Luo had made many outstanding contributions to the country in the war.

"Hehe!" Imperial Concubine Ling laughed with a smile that did not reach her eyes. "General Luo, what an interesting daughter you have! However, please don't forget that the Crown Prince and the representatives of the Weapon Refining Sect are still present. Oh, that's right. Allow me to make the introductions, this is Shi Yun, the daughter of the Sect Master of the Weapon Refining Sect."

The Weapon Refining Sect had always been sacred in the hearts of the people. And now, the daughter of the Sect Master was standing before their eyes.

"Imperial Concubine Ling, the first reason behind our visit to your esteemed country is to attend the Crown Prince's birthday celebration. The second reason is because our sect has been lacking in manpower. So we've especially come to select a few candidates to enter our sect as outer disciples. And I've long heard that there are many talented young cultivators in Azure Dragon Country. We believe that they would make suitable candidates to serve the Weapon Refining Sect."

Shi Yun smiled at the crowd in the garden. Her smile was like a refreshing spring breeze, giving off a kind of abnormally comforting feeling.

Gu Ruoyun felt a psychic connection, and she glanced at Shi Yun in surprise. But she soon looked away without saying another word...

"It seems that you've sensed it too, little girl," Zixie's voice

suddenly echoed from within her soul. "This woman is practicing a long lost divine ritual. Those who practice this will emit an extremely comforting and mesmerizing aura. Men who have seen her will feel unconsciously drawn to her, falling for her. However, this ritual will cause a person's physique to grow extremely weak, and they must continuously absorb the mental energy of others in order to survive. If her supply of mental energy is insufficient, she will die."

Even Zixie was astonished. "How could it be that there is still someone practicing such an evil ritual?" he wondered, "Rituals like this should have disappeared years ago..."

Especially since this woman made him feel extremely uncomfortable. In the past, only one other person had ever made him feel this way...

Hearing Zixie's explanation, Gu Ruoyun fell silent. It would seem that this mainland was far more complicated than she thought...

Chapter 21: The Grave And Stern Crown Prince (5)

"Ladies and gentlemen." Shi Yun smiled gently with a hint of warmth, her eyes filled with gentleness. "In order to assess your abilities, our elders have specially brought the Weapon Refining Sect's Heavenly Spirit Formation today. I will escort you all into the Heavenly Spirit Formation shortly, where you will remain in training for a month. After a month, we will evaluate you based on your results on where you are qualified to enter the Weapon Refining Sect."

Even if they did not know what the Heavenly Spirit Formation was, this was clearly a treasure which had been handed down for generations from the Weapon Refining Sect. So, it was clearly very valuable. They would dearly cherish this opportunity...

The Crown Prince, Leng Yanfeng, who had remained silent from the very beginning, paused for a second when he brushed past Gu Ruoyun. But he did not turn around to look at her again.

He slowly raised his voice and spoke solemnly. "Gu Ruoyun, your antics were only to show off your individuality in order to attract my attention. Unfortunately, this Crown Prince's eyes were never on you..."

Once he finished speaking, he promptly disappeared from Gu Ruoyun's view.

Gu Ruoyun was dumbfounded. Back in the East Peak Mainland, not even Supreme Jin had the right to make her kneel before him.

"So, why should I kneel before a mere Crown Prince?" she wondered, "Yet, my actions...How could the Crown Prince have thought that I was doing all of this to gain his attention?"

She could still remember that long ago, the talented genius Gu Shengxiao would always spar with Leng Yanfeng. And everywhere

they went, Gu Ruoyun would tag along. Everyone thought that she was trying to get close to Leng Yanfeng through her brother, Gu Shengxiao. But that could not have been farther from the truth. For every time the two men sparred, she only ever had eyes for her elder brother.

Hence, the previous Gu Ruoyun did not even like Leng Yanfeng, much less the current Gu Ruoyun in the form of the newly reincarnated Xia Ruoyun!

"Gu Ruoyun, so you've really taken a fancy to the Crown Prince!" Gu Panpan was enraged, glaring hatefully at Gu Ruoyun. "You once denied it and claimed that you did not like the Crown Prince. Yet, now you're actually resorting to such means to get his attention. Fortunately, the Crown Prince saw right through your ploy, otherwise..."

Noting the eyes of the crowd staring towards her, Gu Ruoyun blinked innocently. "What's a Crown Prince? Can you eat it?"

"Eat? You actually want to gobble up the Crown Prince? As expected, Gu Ruoyun. You're two-faced!"

"Alright!" She thought, "This time, not even ten mouths can help clear my innocence..."

Gu Ruoyun shook her head. She simply couldn't be bothered to explain herself. She shrugged her shoulders and said, "Luo Yin, let's go have a look over there."

...

In the Imperial Courtyard, the crowd grew silent. All chatter promptly disappeared upon the arrival of the two elders.

Luo Yin pointed at one of them and exclaimed, "Gu Ruoyun, do you see that old man in black? That's the Crown Prince's teacher, Hun Fei. The other old man in red is Elder Tian Lin. They are both highly skilled cultivators from the Weapon Refining Sect."

Gu Ruoyun nodded, shifting her gaze away from the two men,

and placing her attention on the pillar next to them.

"Unless I am mistaken," she thought, "the space surrounding the four pillars is the doorway to the Heavenly Spirit Formation..."

"Ladies and gentlemen, based on your current strength in power, I will only send you to the first level of the Heavenly Spirit Formation. Remember, you must all remain within the area that I've designated for you. You must not run anywhere else, for if you enter any other district, you will be in grave danger!"

Hun Fei stared seriously at the crowd. "Furthermore, the spiritual energy in the Heavenly Spirit Formation is extremely dense. So, any cultivator who enters must be at least a level three in the Qi Collection ranks. Otherwise, your body will not be able to withstand the tremendous power, and will explode. I am definitely not simply using frightening words to scare you, but I believe that there shouldn't be anyone among you who is still unable to breakthrough into level three."

"Well..." Upon hearing this, Gu Panpan looked as if she was dying to speak up.

Her actions drew the attention of Elder Hun Fei, who frowned and asked, "Is there anything you wish to say, young lady?"

Chapter 22: A Good-For-Nothing? Who? (1)

"Elder Hun Fei." Gu Panpan bit her lip and glanced at Gu Ruoyun, then back at Hun Fei. "It's a bit hard for me to say, but everyone in Azure Dragon Country knows this. After having reached level two in the Qi Collection ranks, Gu Ruoyun, of my family, has not been able to have her breakthrough. So, I'm afraid that she cannot enter the Heavenly Spirit Formation now."

As she explained, Gu Panpan's face filled with sympathy, as if she truly pitied Gu Ruoyun. No one could make out any other expression on her face.

"Oh?" Hun Fei followed Gu Panpan's gaze towards Gu Ruoyun's leisurely and contented face. "She's Gu Ruoyun? Gu Shengxiao's little sister? She doesn't seem to be a child anymore. How could she be a level two in the Qi Collection ranks? How could such a genius like Gu Shengxiao possibly have a good-for-nothing for a sister? This is certainly an eye-opener."

Many years ago, Gu Shengxiao had rejected his offer of apprenticeship. This had humiliated him endlessly! So, naturally, he would not show Gu Ruoyun any courtesy.

"Elder, everyone in Azure Dragon Country knows this. I quite pity her myself, but she is extremely determined, so I don't have much of a choice." Gu Panpan looked extremely helpless like a mother who resented her child for not living up to expectations.

"Gu Panpan, you..."

Luo Yin clenched her fists angrily. Just as she was about to throw her fists out, a hand reached out and held her hand tightly.

The corners of Gu Ruoyun's lips lifted into a smile, her beautiful face lighting up in an enigmatic way. "Gu Panpan, I'm sorry to disappoint you, but as of last night, I've broken through to level three in the Qi Collection ranks."

Her voice was calm like the wind, yet traveled clearly into every ear present.

Just then, Gu Panpan's expression stiffened, as if she had been given a tight slap. She wished to find a hole and bury herself in it.

If this were any other day where Gu Ruoyun had broken through to level three, she could still scoff and laugh at her. However, since she had just announced that Gu Ruoyun was merely at level two in the Qi Collection ranks, and consequently, would be unable to enter the Heavenly Spirit Formation, she was humiliated on the spot. It was like a slap in the face.

Taking a deep breath, Gu Panpan laughed. "Then, I should congratulate you. It's taken years for you to finally break through to level three. But who knows how long you'll have to wait until your next breakthrough? I'm certain that in about ten years, you'll definitely reach level four."

"Don't worry, I'll definitely have my breakthrough before you die."

Pfft!

Luo Yin could not contain herself. She burst out laughing and patted Gu Ruoyun's shoulders. "Ruoyun, do you mean to say that once you break through to level four, her death day will not be very far off? Then, Gu Panpan should probably watch herself. Once Ruoyun has her breakthrough, you'd better hide somewhere or you might mysteriously expire. Tsk tsk, wouldn't it be a pity for such an exquisitely beautiful face to die off so soon?"

Gu Panpan's face turned from green to white, it was a spectacular sight. However, Gu Ruoyun was beginning to admire her tolerance level. She was actually able to maintain her composure without flipping out after suffering such humiliation from Luo Yin.

"Gu Ruoyun, you'd better watch your mouth!" General Gu's face sunk as he exclaimed harshly, "And General Luo, is this how you've

educated your daughter? She has nothing to show for her upbringing at all!"

"Upbringing?" General Luo scoffed, "At least, I didn't beat my own granddaughter until she nearly died without clarifying the truth of the matter. I'm way ahead of you, old man."

To be honest, General Luo simply couldn't understand it.

"Gu Ruoyun was still the flesh and blood of the Gu Family," he thought, "Yet, this old man recklessly issued her a beating, and all for the sake of that boy from the Ling Family? He nearly beat her to death! Is this how a grandfather should behave?"

Chapter 23: A Good-For-Nothing? Who? (2)

"Enough!"

Just as General Gu was about to retort, an irritated voice interrupted.

Hun Fei shot a look towards Gu Ruoyun and spoke expressionlessly, "Since you've broken through to level three, you may enter the Heavenly Spirit Formation. But remember, this is the lowest requirement to enter the Heavenly Spirit Formation. Even the lower level areas would be very dangerous for you. You'd better watch out."

A level three in the Qi Collection ranks was not worth a second glance. One breath was all he needed to scare this little girl out of her wits.

He wondered to himself how was it a genius like Gu Shengxiao have such a good-for-nothing sister?

Hun Fei shook his head helplessly at that thought.

With the combined efforts of Hun Fei and Tian Lin, the door to the Heavenly Spirit Formation was opened. After that, most of the members of the younger generation entered the formation and it would be a month before any of them would be seen again. As such, the rest of the crowd dispersed, heading back to their own homes and would only be returning to the palace after a month.

Presently, Hun Fei stared into the empty Imperial compound, deep in thought.

"Not too long ago, a strange weather appeared in the skies of the Imperial Capital of Azure Dragon Country. The Sect Master studied the stars and predicted that a powerful cultivator had arrived in the world and that a great change will befall the mainland. If we are able to recruit this cultivator, our Weapon Refining Sect will certainly rise above all the other sects!"

Unfortunately, the only thing the Sect Master could foresee was that the strong cultivator would arrive in the body of some young talent. He was not able to predict his identity. Otherwise, we wouldn't need to resort to utilizing the Heavenly Spirit Formation as a test."

Tian Lin paused before raising his head, speaking calmly, "Something is bothering me far more than the identity of that genius."

"What is it?"

"I'm not sure if you felt it. That girl they called Gu Ruoyun, she may lack talent but her mental capacity is great! Far greater than the other geniuses we have encountered."

Hun Fei's heart began to palpitate as he asked doubtfully, "I didn't notice this due to her relationship with Gu Shengxiao. Are you saying that she has great mental capacity?"

Hun Fei's breathing quickened at the thought. If they could coax Gu Ruoyun into giving them her mental capacity, they can cure their Lady of her affliction.

"Hun Fei, the price of losing one's mental capacity is to become an idiot. I'm not sure this Gu Ruoyun will agree to this based on what I can tell from her personality." Tian Lin shook his head, replying in a level tone.

"I doubt that would be the case," Hun Fei sneered, "She is only a good-for-nothing in Azure Dragon Country, looked down upon by many. If she is willing to give herself to us for the sake of her Ladyship, our Weapon Refining Sect will take care of her for the rest of her life. Besides, it is a privilege for her to contribute her mental capacity to her Ladyship. After all, our Weapon Refining Sect will be required to contribute in the future wars that befall our mainland, and our Lady is the number one genius of the Weapon Refining Sect. This matter concerns the greater good of the entire mainland. As a citizen of the mainland, it is natural that

one would contribute to the livelihood of it. Just like the others who have contributed before this, no one could possibly reject our offer."

He spoke as if Gu Ruoyun should feel grateful for the opportunity to sacrifice herself for Shi Yun and that if she were to reject them, she would become a criminal throughout the mainland who deserves to be torn into ten thousand pieces and to be despised by all!

Tian Lin smiled bitterly and shook his head, "I see that that girl has an unyielding character and does not seem to be the kind of person who can be easily moved, Hun Fei. They will reemerge from the Heavenly Spirit Formation in a month, let us wait until then..."

Chapter 24: A Good-For-Nothing? Who? (3)

Between the valleys, within a lush green forest, the little master Ling stood amongst the crowd, basking in his status as a revered leader among the group. Suddenly, out of the corner of his eye, he saw Gu Ruoyun walking out of the crowd.

A cocky smile bloomed on his delicate face. "Just you wait and see, Gu Ruoyun! When the time of our duel arrives, I'll make you kneel before me and call me grandfather!"

...

Spiritual energy was abundant in the Heavenly Spirit Formation, far more than whatever was available in the world outside. If Gu Ruoyun were to cultivate here and utilize the help of the Qi Gathering Pill, she would definitely break through to level four in the Qi Collection ranks in less than a month.

As such, after entering the Heavenly Spirit Formation, she first convinced Luo Yin to go to another area for practice and found a cave for herself to cultivate in.

At this moment, Gu Ruoyun sat cross-legged in the cave, allowing faint wisps of spiritual energy to slowly engulf her body. They were absorbed into her open pores as it seeped into her spiritual ocean.

Gu Ruoyun felt an unspeakable sense of comfort as she watched the spiritual energy slowly pouring into her spiritual ocean.

Time passed as minutes and seconds rolled on. In that period of time, she remained hidden in the cave, cultivating. Most people who had not seen her for a long time had assumed that she had died in the claws of some demonic beast.

Just as everyone began to believe that she was already dead, a wave of faintly discernible spiritual energy washed over a cave not too far off from the door to the Heavenly Spirit Formation. While

it's fluctuations were not great, anyone who was near the cave could feel it clearly.

"I've finally broken through to level four in the Qi Collection ranks."

Gu Ruoyun opened her eyes and murmured, "I wonder how much time has passed."

As she spoke, a demonic voice spoke calmly from within her soul, "It's been almost twenty days."

"Twenty days?" Gu Ruoyun shook, "I thought it's been a month, I didn't think that it's only been twenty days. This is all thanks to the Qi Gathering Pill. Without it, I probably wouldn't even be able to breakthrough. Even a month would not be enough."

After all, back in the East Peak Mainland, she needed a month and a half to break through. And even then, she was considered an absolute genius.

Gu Ruoyun's throat tightened at the thought. She had a feeling that her achievements in this life would be on par with her achievements from her past life at the very least.

"Mm?"

Suddenly, Gu Ruoyun felt a peculiar fluctuation of energy from deep within the cave. A hint of astonishment flashed across her face, "What a powerful spiritual energy! That... That's a spiritual weapon? But I didn't even sense its aura when I came in here. Could it be that I accidentally touched something while I was cultivating?"

In that moment, her heart nearly leaped from her chest.

"That's a spiritual weapon, it's not like any other weapon!" She thought to herself. After all, spiritual weapons carry spiritual energy. And if one were to obtain a high-class spiritual weapon, it would even contain a sword spirit that can materialize in battles. In a duel, if two opponents have the same level of strength, but one

wielded an average weapon and the other a spiritual weapon, the latter will certainly win in the end.

Most importantly, spiritual weapons do not simply crop up everywhere like cabbages. You might even say that they were a rare find. Even Gu Ruoyun herself wasn't able to obtain one in her past life.

She certainly didn't expect to find such a treasure in just a few days. Most people would kill to have this.

"That is indeed the fluctuations from a spiritual weapon. Go take a look, little girl. Perhaps you'll find an unexpected reward."

"Alright."

Gu Ruoyun nodded. But what she couldn't understand was this — how could the members of the Weapon Refining Sect not know of the presence of this spiritual weapon? Otherwise, why did they not claim it as their own?

"No!" She thought.

"The Weapon Refining Sect prioritized refining weapons. They could not possibly miss out on a spiritual weapon," she reasoned, "So why has this spiritual weapon been left here for such a long time, and why hasn't anyone taken it away?"

Chapter 25: A Good-For-Nothing? Who? (4)

However, once Gu Ruoyun laid her eyes on the spiritual weapon, she understood why it remained untouched in the Weapon Refining Sect's formation.

How should this be explained? The sword was indeed a spiritual weapon. But unfortunately, the spiritual weapon was completely worn out. Its surface was covered in rust and stains, like a formerly great cultivator who lost his spiritual energy and was now no different from the average person.

Of course, an observation like this would only apply to the average individuals.

But what was this to Gu Ruoyun? A genius from the East Peak Mainland, and the Master of the Ancient Divine Pagoda. Saving this once majestic spiritual weapon was not a problem, all she really needed was time.

"Zixie, coincidentally, I don't have a weapon on hand. This spiritual weapon may have lost its spiritual energy, but it is still more powerful than an ordinary weapon. Besides, that strong spiritual energy I sensed must have come from the spiritual energy it absorbed during my cultivation. That's how it led me here!"

The voice in her soul quietened. After a long pause, Zixie's voice finally reached Gu Ruoyun's ears.

"Then you should take it first. We'll find a higher grade weapon for you in the future. While this may be a spiritual weapon, this one is of the lowest grade. It does not suit your status."

Gu Ruoyun could not help it. Her mouth twitched, and she rubbed her head exasperatedly.

"Does this guy think that spiritual weapons are as common as cabbages?" She wondered to herself, "One low-class spiritual weapon is enough to start a fight among many expert cultivators,

what more a high-class spiritual weapon?"

"Let's go. I'm almost done with my cultivation. It's time that we leave."

Many people were already gathered outside the cave. Upon seeing Gu Ruoyun walking out from the cave, the crowd fell into a hush before erupting into a flurry of questions.

"Gu Ruoyun, what's a good-for-nothing like you doing in a place like this? I felt the peculiar fluctuations from the cave a while ago. Some precious treasure must have appeared in this very cave. Hand over the treasure and maybe I'll even spare your life!"

Gu Ruoyun knitted her brows and matched the voice that spoke to a young man in green amongst the crowd. Her lips curled up wryly.

"Son of the vice minister for the Department of Revenue and the little footman of that little master from the Ling Family. Who are you calling a good-for-nothing?"

The young man sneered, "Who else could I possibly be talking about? Are you not that good-for-nothing that everyone knows about? Gu Ruoyun, be tactful and hand over the treasure. Otherwise, I'll make you kneel and bow before me. Besides, your brother wouldn't even know if you died here, ha..."

Ha...

Before the last laugh was heard, the crowd heard a loud bang and the young man's body transformed into a streak of light and was flung into the sky with a whoosh before being violently thrown back onto the ground

The minds of the rest of the crowd went blank. They slowly turned their heads towards Gu Ruoyun's frail-looking body.

Gu Ruoyun swung her arms around as if nothing had happened, not even bothering to spare another glance at the young man on the ground.

"He's pretty strong. This slap actually hurt my hand."

The young man may be the little master Ling's footman but his powers were still comparable to that of the little master's. He was also a level five in the Qi Collection ranks. Gu Ruoyun was only a good-for-nothing at level three, yet one slap from her could send him flying through the air?

Even though she was saying that he's pretty strong and that he had actually hurt her hand, the crowd wondered if this woman knew that she was insulting him and not complimenting him?

"Ah right," Gu Ruoyun's gaze shifted as she smiled at the onlookers, "Did anybody else called me a good-for-nothing? Do you dare step out?"

In actual fact, once she signed a contract with the Ancient Divine Pagoda, Gu Ruoyun's body and soul were subjected to a cleansing process. Not only did it increased the strength of her soul, but it had also increased the capabilities of her body in every aspect. Unless someone suddenly broke through the Qi Collection levels and reached the rank of Martial Warrior, none of them was a match for her.

Seeing Gu Ruoyun in this current state, the people in the crowd only looked at each other. Not one of them dared to step out the entire time.

Chapter 26: The Sinister Ling Family Is Met With Danger (1)

"No one?" Gu Ruoyun's smile grew cold, a chill crept into her clear eyes, "Then from now on, remember this! Should any one of you ever call me a good-for-nothing, then I wouldn't mind giving you a taste of my power! I, Gu Ruoyun, am the daughter of Gu Tian and sister to Gu Shengxiao. They are both geniuses of unparalleled caliber and I will not be a disgrace to them!"

While Gu Ruoyun did not care for her reputation, there were people she cared about.

In her previous life, she would have been better off without her father and was unable to protect her beloved brother. But now that she was given a second chance at life, she would live her life in the old Gu Ruoyun's place and avenge her father!

She would not allow anyone to insult them!

Not far off, beneath the soft breeze, a man dressed in yellow stood in the midst of grassy plains. Even though his clothes were eye-catching, no one noticed him.

Leng Yanfeng coldly observed Gu Ruoyun. An almost undecipherable look flashed across his face and disappeared as quickly as it came.

"Gu Ruoyun, is this how you plan on getting my attention? Unfortunately, you will never get my attention, no matter how hard you try. You will never be able to hold my gaze."

He had intended to check up on the situation in the Heavenly Spirit Formation but he did not expect to witness such a scene. Leng Yanfeng simply refused to believe that Gu Ruoyun did not notice his presence, especially since he was standing directly opposite her. That must be the reason why she said those words.

Because he once said that only the strong are fit to stand by his

side!

Sadly, this time, Leng Yanfeng was thinking too highly of himself. Gu Ruoyun might have sensed his presence but she really could not be bothered to look at him.

"You idiots, you can't even take care of a good-for-nothing!"

Just then, a smug yet arrogant voice pierced the silence. Like a heavy rock was thrown into the water, creating a ripple.

The next thing they saw was Ling Xi leading a group of people into the crowd. He looked at Gu Ruoyun and sneered, "I sensed the fluctuations coming from this area and suspected that a treasure must have appeared. So I decided to come here and investigate and I ended up overhearing your conversation. There are so many of you, yet you are all afraid of this good-for-nothing? So what if I insult Gu Shengxiao? It's his own disgrace for having such a good-for-nothing sister! And that short-lived father of yours. If he was alive today, he would probably choose suicide over having a good-for-nothing daughter like you! Gu Ruoyun, what's the use of having you alive? You'll only be a disgrace to your father and brother. Your father has to live with the shame of having a daughter like you, even in death!"

"Refreshing!" He thought to himself, "This is absolutely refreshing! Every time I bully this good-for-nothing, I always feel so refreshed!"

However, little master Ling was so blinded by his arrogance that he did not notice Gu Ruoyun narrowing her eyes.

"Little master, be careful. This woman just defeated Lin Xi, the son of the vice minister for the Department of Revenue."

The people around little master Ling were worried that he would regret his actions and warned him against it.

"What?"

Ling Xi was astonished. He burst into laughter, "Lin Xi is at least

a level five in the Qi Collection ranks and a good-for-nothing actually defeated him? Forget about my own disbelief, no one in Azure Dragon Country could possibly believe this. Try to lie a little better next time."

Just as he finished speaking, Ling Xi suddenly noticed Lin Xi on the ground. The smile on his face froze in place.

He arrived too late and was not able to catch whatever happened in time. Otherwise, he would not have jumped into such a humiliating situation without any preparation.

But what did he manage to find? The level five Lin Xi, lying motionlessly on the ground as if he was dead.

Chapter 27: The Sinister Ling Family Is Met With Danger (2)

As he stared at Gu Ruoyun's faint smile, Ling Xi gulped. He finally regained his composure and exclaimed, "Gu Ruoyun, I have never expected you to conceal your powers so well. I simply cannot understand, why didn't you raise your hand against me when you had the chance? However, aren't you thinking too highly of yourself? There are so many of us and only one of you. If we come at you together, do you really think that you would be a match for us? I'll give you one last chance. Hand over the treasure and I might grant you an easy death!"

"That's right, this woman is alone. And there are so many of them. How could they be afraid of her? Could it be that she doesn't understand the concept of being hopelessly outnumbered?" Ling Xi thought to himself.

"Treasure? You mean this?" Gu Ruoyun swept her gaze towards the crowd. Then, with a swoosh, a sword appeared in her hand and she pointed its rusty blade towards Ling Xi.

Ling Xi was momentarily stunned, when he snapped out of it, he growled in anger, "Gu Ruoyun, are you insulting our intelligence? You dare claim that this broken blade is the treasure? Do you think I am a three-year-old child?"

"Exactly, it's only a broken blade. No one would want it even if you gave it to them."

"Gu Ruoyun, you'd better hand over the treasure. We'll leave your corpse whole for the sake of your brother, Gu Shengxiao!"

"Oh?" Faced with a flurry of shouts, Gu Ruoyun calmly withdrew her sword, "So you think you have high intelligence? Based on what I can tell, that's not really the case. I've already offered to give the treasure to you but you've refused it yourself. It's not like I

don't want to give it to you."

At this moment, hidden among the trees, Leng Yanfeng focused his gaze upon the calm and composed Gu Ruoyun. He mumbled to himself with a puzzled look on his handsome face, "Gu Ruoyun, it seems that you are not purposely acting in front of me. It is because the world has been looking down on you..."

She had actually managed to discover the Weapon Refining Sect's spiritual weapon!

That also proved that her mental energy was far stronger than the average person.

Leng Yanfeng fell momentarily silent, he finally glanced at Gu Ruoyun before disappearing into the woods.

"Gu Ruoyun, if you're not going to come to your senses, then we have no choice but to kill you!"

A cold light flashed across Ling Xi's eyes and he sneered, "If killing you means that we can obtain the treasure, then your life might have had some sort of meaning to it!"

Shua!

Just as he spoke, he charged straight towards Gu Ruoyun.

Everyone else quickly exchanged looks, then charged towards the thin figure in the middle from all directions.

"Once we have killed her," they thought, "The treasure will be ours!"

The look in their eyes changed greatly at the thought of this. Desire, lust and a determination to win.

However...

Under the light breeze, the young girl raised her delicate and pretty face before she spoke. Her airy voice was heard by every pair of ears there. It was as if an entire century had passed...

"Is this the extent of your speed? Too slow. I'm sorry, I have no interest in fighting with children like you."

As she spoke, a heavy load of fists slammed into their bodies. Unable to control themselves, they stumbled backward.

"Impossible!"

Ling Xi widened his eyes. Even though Gu Ruoyun's body was inches away, he could only watch with a widened gaze...

"This woman, how did she become so strong?" He wondered, "All these years, what deep secrets had she been concealing?"

Peng!

Regardless of how much he resisted, Ling Xi's body slammed heavily to the ground. Just as he fell, he seemed to have remembered something and let out a furious roar.

Chapter 28: The Sinister Ling Family Is Met With Danger (3)

"Gu Ruoyun, have you been doing this on purpose? Were you deliberately allowing me to bully and suppress you so that you can challenge me to a duel and turn the tables on me? And then to eventually crush me? What grudge do you have against me that you would spend so many years, painstakingly hiding your abilities just to humiliate me?"

Obviously, Ling Xi was overthinking things. He now assumed that Gu Ruoyun was concealing her power just to violently humiliate him.

Of course, Gu Ruoyun had always been the kind that was far too lazy to explain herself to unimportant people. Hence the reason why Ling Xi interpreted her silence as consent.

"Aaaaaaahhhh! Gu Ruoyun, I'm going to kill you!!!"

Ling Xi roared angrily and crawled up from the ground. He raised his hand and a golden rune appeared in the palm of his hands, giving off a faint glow and illuminating his grim face.

"This is the one and only rune belonging to my Ling Family. Back then, my grandfather spent a lot of money in order to purchase it from an expert cultivator. So, Gu Ruoyun, this time, your death is certain!"

Immediately after, Ling Xi split the rune open.

A golden light flashed and Ling Yi appeared out of thin air before the eyes of the crowd.

Ling Xi sighed in relief at the sight of his grandfather's appearance and quickly explained the situation, "Grandfather, you must save me. If I did not bring this teleportation rune that you gave me, I'm not sure that I'll be able to see you again."

"Oh?" Ling Yi's facial expression slowly hardened, shadows clouding his elderly face. He asked, "Who dares to harm my flesh and blood?"

Instantly, all eyes fell on Gu Ruoyun. Ling Yi followed their line of sight and found the young girl who had remained still from the very beginning.

"The girl from the Gu Family?" Ling Yi mused silently.

He frowned, "Xi'er, this girl is merely a level three in the Qi Collection ranks. Don't tell me that you can't even defeat her?"

"It's not like that, grandfather. This Gu family conspired to conceal her abilities. She managed to defeat all of us in one blow. Her powers are definitely not at the strength of a level three. She is at least a level six or seven. Furthermore," Ling Xi paused and sneered, "Her intentions in killing me are not just because of a grudge against me but to end the line of succession of the Ling family! Such a treacherous and malicious person... Grandfather, you can't let her live!"

Bang!

Fierce, raging flames erupted from Ling Yi's body. His eyes glared coldly at Gu Ruoyun, "Such a vicious heart at such a young age, little girl... Sparing you will only result in a disaster for the world. In order to avoid bringing calamity on innocent lives, I... can only kill you to avoid future disasters!"

The gloomy aura he emitted was not only limited to his surroundings. The people around him began to feel as if the air around them was growing thin, making the crowd feel extremely suffocated.

Gu Ruoyun's heart sank.

Based on her current level in strength, she could not possibly go up against Ling Xi. Consequently, the only way out is to escape!

"Haha!"

Gu Ruoyun burst into laughter at the thought of this. Her smile spread to the corners of her lips, holding a trace of mockery.

"So, this is the magnificent Ling family? Where the elders step into a fight when the young ones can't hold their own? This is certainly an eye-opening experience! Ling Yi, I, Gu Ruoyun, will remember this day. One day, I will make your Ling Family pay!"

An air of dominance filled the young girl's thin face, it was a kind of regality that even the emperor did not possess. Ling Yi stared at her absent-mindedly, as if he had seen a familiar face — one that he had not seen in a long time.

The peerless genius who disappeared over ten years ago, Gu Tian! That exceedingly brilliant man who had become the youngest Martial Emperor in the mainland! In that moment, Gu Ruoyun seemed to bear a striking resemblance to him...

"No!" He thought, "This won't do. I mustn't let this woman get out of here alive. She's too dangerous!"

Chapter 29: A Peerlessly Beautiful Man, A Wife? (1)

"Gu Ruoyun, no matter what you say, I'm not going to allow anyone who brings harm to my Ling Family to walk on this earth — alive!" Ling Yi's aura grew stronger as he coldly declared, "Because of that, you must die here today!"

Gu Ruoyun laughed coldly, "If you fail in killing me, I hope you'll never, ever regret it."

Then, she turned around and bolted towards the mountain range without sparing a second glance at the Ling family's grandfather and grandson.

"Trying to escape? Hmph. Let's see if you can!"

Ling Yi narrowed his eyes and chased after her without another word.

Realizing that the distance between them was closing in, Gu Ruoyun began to panic. If Ling Yi caught up with her, she would undoubtedly perish.

"I must not die before I get my revenge in the East Peak Mainland," she thought to herself, "I must not die!"

She accelerated her speed at the thought of this, gathering strength she never knew she had, giving everything she had into charging towards escape.

Sweat was now dripping from her delicate face, her clothes began to cling to her body. She felt as if she had taken a shower. Alas, Gu Ruoyun's spirit was willing but her flesh was weak. She began to feel the first wave of fatigue taking over.

"No!" She tightened her resolve, "I will not die here."

"Let me out, little girl. I'll help you deal with that old man."

Zixie wrinkled his brow, a gloomy and cold light flashed across his demonic, handsome face.

"No," Gu Ruoyun shook her head, "This is a formation belonging to the Weapon Refining Sect. If you suddenly reveal yourself, it may draw their attention to you. My wings are not fully grown yet, so I don't want to get involved with people like them just yet."

This was her main concern.

Zixie was her final trump card and the only effective weapon she had for revenge. She would not allow Zixie to show himself under any circumstances unless she absolutely had no other choice.

Realizing that Ling Yi was closing in, Gu Ruoyun's forehead began to bead with cold sweat. Suddenly, a cliff came into view. She quickly halted her steps, causing a few rocks to roll off the cliff. Her own heart felt like it was suddenly tipping over the edge as well.

"Stupid girl. Let's see how you're going to get away this time! A mere little level four in the Qi Collection ranks, making an old man run after you for such a distance. If this gets out, I'll never live it down in Azure Dragon Country! It's a good thing that you're going to die by my hand very soon. Hahaha!!!"

"That's right," he thought, "This girl is only a level four in the Qi Collection ranks. Yet she's actually managed to defeat my grandson. I cannot believe this. Especially since there's such a huge gap between the two levels."

"Die?" Gu Ruoyun smiled, "I'm afraid you don't have the power to kill me!"

She immediately turned around and jumped off the cliff without a single trace of hesitation.

"Not good!" Ling Yi's expression changed immediately. He hurriedly stepped forward to investigate the situation. But the fog was too thick, how could he possibly pick up Gu Ruoyun's trail?

"However, with such a deep cliff, she'll probably end up in pieces at the bottom. Based on her level of strength, she couldn't possibly survive this. Just in case, I'd better check for a corpse. I cannot leave this up to chance."

...

Drip!

Drip! Drip!

The clear sound of dripping water rang in Gu Ruoyun's ear. She furrowed her brow and slowly opened her eyes to find a handsome face staring back at her. Their heads were so close together that the man only needed to lower his head to kiss her tender lips.

"Thump!"

Gu Ruoyun regained her senses and swiftly pushed Zixie away. She screamed angrily at him, "What are you trying to do?"

Chapter 30: A Peerlessly Beautiful Man, A Wife? (2)

"You're heartless, little girl. I've held you in my arms for such a long time and yet you pushed me away so cruelly the moment you awoken."

Zixie looked extremely hurt as if he had suffered a huge amount of abuse.

"Zixie?" Gu Ruoyun was astonished, "Why have you shown yourself? Didn't I tell you..."

"Don't you worry. I sensed a force in here that can help block my aura. No one will be able to sense my presence. But you're pretty bold, jumping off a cliff like that. Are you not afraid of dying?"

"I am very afraid of dying. That's why I will never put my life in danger," Gu Ruoyun smiled, "I heard the sound of running water at the edge of the cliff and guessed that it wouldn't be a very sharp drop. At least, it's not deep enough for me to fall to my death. Oh right, you've mentioned that there's a force within this area, what is it?"

Zixie grew silent, pausing for half a minute before raising his head towards Gu Ruoyun with a serious look on his handsome face.

"The Heavenly Spirit Formation was not a formation that belongs to the Weapon Refining Sect. It originated from the East Peak Mainland and was created by a strong cultivator! The details of this are unclear to me but I can sense a strong power within."

"A strong power?" Gu Ruoyun frowned, a glint flashed across her eyes, "Zixie, I'd like to investigate the situation and see what secrets lie within this cave!"

Zixie looked slightly hesitant, briefly thinking over her request before replying, "You know that my powers are sealed, little girl. It was only just now that I felt the first seal loosen. I must

immediately shut myself in closed door cultivation in order to break through it, so..."

"Don't worry. I'll be alright on my own."

"Okay," Zixie nodded, "Should you be in any danger, summon me immediately. I will awaken from my slumber and come to your rescue."

Gu Ruoyun did not reply. She understood that this closed door cultivation was very important for Zixie. Unless she lands in an absolutely tight spot, she would not summon him...

In the cave, the sound of rippling waters could be heard clearly. It struck Gu Ruoyun, deep in her heart. Her heart raced with anxiety.

She made slow and careful footsteps, as if she was afraid that she would disturb the things around her. In the beginning, she could not sense the mysterious power that Zixie had mentioned. But the more she explored, the more the power came within range of her senses, making it hard for her to breathe.

But strangely, there was not the slightest bit of danger along the way!

"No!" She denied. "I could feel myself surrounded by strange auras. Yet these unknown creatures did not attack me."

This greatly puzzled her, she could not understand what was going on.

Even she herself did not know how long she had been walking until a stone door appeared in front of her.

"There's no mistake about it, it's behind this door. That mysterious power is hiding behind this door."

Gu Ruoyun took a deep breath, slowly placing her hand on the stone door. Just as she thought she had prepared herself, the stone door opened on its own.

In that instant, the sight before her took her breath away. She had never seen such a stunning sight.

On a bed in the stone room, lay a man. His hair was a mass of dazzling silver hair, like the silver ripples of water, cascading onto the floor. He wore a robe of crimson blood-red, which contrasted with his pale features perfectly. Between his brows was a crimson flame that looked very much like a rose in full bloom. It was absolutely mesmerizing.

Gu Ruoyun had never seen such a breathtakingly beautiful man in her entire life. Not even the most beautiful woman in the world had one-tenth of his beauty. A single look was all it took to make one's heart skip a beat.

Before she could recover her senses, the man slowly opened his eyes.

Confusion and uncertainty clouded the man's crimson eyes as he slowly swept his gaze around the stone room before his line of sight finally landed on Gu Ruoyun.

She did not know why but Gu Ruoyun instinctively felt as if this man was extremely dangerous! So dangerous that he had the power to destroy the entire world!

However, whatever the man said next stunned her, rooting her to where she stood. It made her lose all sense of propriety.

"Wife."

"Wife?" She thought.

It was like a thunderbolt had struck her. Gu Ruoyun stared in astonishment at the man's peerlessly beautiful face.

"This man... Upon opening his eyes, he called me... his wife?" She wondered to herself, confused.

"Who are you? Why are you here?"

The man frowned and shook his head, "I don't know."

"You don't know?"

"I don't remember anything."

Gu Ruoyun stroked her chin as she watched the man who was struggling to recall his identity.

"It seemed that this guy had lost his memories," she mused, "He's forgotten everything."

...

Meanwhile, in a part of the Heavenly Spirit Formation, beyond the reach of Gu Ruoyun's senses, around a mountain range in the mainland, a loud roar rang out, echoing throughout the skies. The spiritual beasts in the mountain range fell on their knees, collectively bowing towards a certain direction.

"Our king has awoken! Everyone shall welcome him! All shall bow before him! Our king has returned!"

Chapter 31: A Peerlessly Beautiful Man, A Wife? (3)

In the stone room.

Gu Ruoyun stared at the confused yet peerlessly beautiful man. She gently raised her eyebrows, "It seems that the mysterious power I sensed came from your body. Seeing as I've discovered the source of the power, it's time for me to leave."

The man got off his stone bed and followed closely behind Gu Ruoyun. His long, silvery hair gave off an unusually ethereal look, it was absolutely bewitching. It gave him a completely otherworldly look.

Except that, now, a pitiful look appeared on the man's peerlessly beautiful face. He stared woefully at Gu Ruoyun.

"Don't follow me." Gu Ruoyun paused in her steps and exclaimed without looking back. Then she picked up her pace and fled from the strange place.

...

The month passed by in a flash. Many were gathered in the imperial courtyard. Just then, a light flashed across the formation and the youngsters who were sent into the formation for cultivation appeared before their very eyes.

Luo Yin searched for Gu Ruoyun amongst the crowd but could not find that familiar figure. She did not know why but she felt a deep sense of anxiety.

"Could it be that something has happened to Gu Ruoyun?" She wondered, "No! Impossible. Nothing could have possibly happened to her."

"Why do I not see Gu Ruoyun of the Gu family?"

Hun Fei's expression grew cold, his eyes swept its gaze across the

crowd.

After all, Gu Ruoyun had no ties to their Weapon Refining Sect. If they could convince her into contributing all of her mental capacity, they would be able to cure their Lady of her ailing body. So, no harm must come to that woman!

"Lord Hun Fei, Gu Ruoyun ran into a few spiritual beasts and was attacked in the Heavenly Spirit Formation. As a result, she lost her life. We don't need to wait for her." The little master Ling sneered, he had already bribed the witnesses anyway. No one was going to out him with the truth.

"What did you say?" Luo Yin's face changed greatly. She shot an angry glare at Ling Xi, "Say it again. Tell me what you just said!"

"Hmph!" Ling Xi sneered, "I said, Gu Ruoyun ran into a few spiritual beasts and was attacked. She's dead. I saw it with my own eyes. It's all true!"

"If you saw it happen, why didn't you save her?" Luo Yin clenched her fists, feeling her heart trembling. Her voice grew hoarse, carrying an unmistakable tinge of rage in her voice.

"Save her?" Ling Xi stared at Luo Yin as if she was an idiot, "Why should I save her? She's only a good-for-nothing. If she dies, she dies. What does that have to do with me? Allowing a good-for-nothing like her to remain alive is simply a waste of food and resources! The earlier her demise, the sooner she reincarnates. She should be thanking me for not saving her. Now she no longer has to endure the pain of living in this world."

"That's right," he thought, "Gu Ruoyun is a good-for-nothing! Grandfather has already told me that that woman is merely a level four in the Qi Collection Ranks. A level four defeating a level five like me! She had definitely utilized the treasure she found in the cave to help her. Otherwise, how could she have possibly been able to defeat me?"

Luo Yin roared furiously, her fist landed on Ling Xi's handsome mug.

It all happened so suddenly. No one had any time to react.

"Ling Xi, you bastard! I'm going to avenge Gu Ruoyun today!"

A barrage of fists rained down on Ling Xi's body. Luo Yin's eyes glazed over with tears, it was as if she was venting all of her anger in one go.

Ling Yi regained his senses at the sight of his own grandson being beaten to a pulp. He quickly ordered, "Servants, get that little bitch!"

"Little bitch, who are you calling a little bitch, you mother f*cker?" General Luo was enraged, stepping out from the crowd and shielding Luo Yin, "I am not dead yet. I'd certainly like to see who f*cking dares to lay a hand on my daughter!"

The atmosphere was brimming with an extreme amount of anger in an instant. Everyone tried to breathe as quietly as they could, not daring to make a single sound.

Just then, a puzzled voice was heard from behind the crowd.

"What has happened? Luo Yin, I've only just returned. Why are you in such a valiant state?"

Chapter 32: The Shameless Weapon Refining Sect (1)

Luo Yin's fists froze just as she was about to land another punch on Ling Xi. She turned her head in disbelief. Her mouth widened at the sight of the young girl. She exclaimed distractedly, "Gu Ruoyun, you're not dead?"

"Who told you that I was dead?" Gu Ruoyun rolled her eyes.

So Luo Yin gestured with full honesty towards Ling Xi, who was spitting blood, "He said that he witnessed your death in the claws of spiritual beasts. I was just about to collect his debt. I didn't think that you'd still be alive. But it's just like what they say, 'the good do not live long, but the troublemakers live for a thousand years'. Gu Ruoyun, you're a troublemaker."

That's right, this woman was definitely a troublemaker. If she appeared one second later, she might have inadvertently caused Ling Xi's death.

"He definitely wants me dead. But I still have a pretty long life. I didn't die."

Gu Ruoyun raised her lips. Her gaze landed on Ling Xi's pale face. No one could tell what that look meant.

"Alright, seeing as almost everyone has arrived, I declare that your trials have officially ended." Hun Fei mentally breathed a sigh of relief. To him, Gu Ruoyun held great importance in ensuring the safety of his Lady. There can be no mistakes. After all, besides her, there's probably no one else in the world who possessed such strong mental capacity.

Hun Fei let out a dry cough at the thought of this and spoke with a serious look on his face, "Azure Dragon Country has always produced talented individuals. The late Gu Tian was once the greatest genius in the mainland. And now, Gu Shengxiao and Leng

Yanfeng have turned out to have formidable talent. Just like the rest of you, there are a few outstanding individuals. But sadly, there is one individual who will never achieve this standard, no matter how hard she tries."

All eyes turned towards Gu Ruoyun. To them, the only person in this world who would never accomplish anything no matter how hard she tried. She was the infamous good-for-nothing from the Gu family — Gu Ruoyun!

General Gu now had an ugly expression on his face. He glared fiercely at Gu Ruoyun, as if she was not his granddaughter but an irreconcilable enemy.

"Gu Ruoyun," Hun Fei looked at Gu Ruoyun and spoke coldly, "Your brother is a genius among geniuses, yet you have the physical body of a good-for-nothing. I have sensed that your spiritual ocean is unusually vast. It would be far more difficult for you to break through the ranks when compared to a normal person. With a spiritual ocean like this in your body, you will never accomplish anything in this lifetime."

Staring at the disdainful gaze that the crowd directed at her, Gu Ruoyun raised the corners of her lips into a calm smile.

"This mainland is certainly more primitive than the East Peak Mainland," she observed, "Otherwise, how could a strong cultivator from the Weapon Refining Sect be so incapable of realizing the potential I have? After all, if I had this level of potential flowing in my veins, I probably wouldn't have met with such a grisly end."

"However..." Hun Fei paused, a cunning glint flashed across his eyes, "Our Weapon Refining Sect has never been the kind that would look down on good-for-nothings like you. Now, I'll give you an opportunity to swear your undying loyalty to our Weapon Refining Sect, what do you say?"

He looked as if he was doing a charitable act, staring smugly at

Gu Ruoyun.

As if Gu Ruoyun could not refuse his offer, but instead, should feel thankful for being given the opportunity to sacrifice herself for the sake of the Weapon Refining Sect.

"What?" The crowd thought in unison, "Allowing this good-for-nothing to swear her loyalty to the Weapon Refining Sect? Has water gone into Lord Hun Fei's brain? Is that why he's made such a decision?"

Upon hearing his proposition, the crowd exploded into heated discussions. None of them could believe their ears — the great Weapon Refining Sect is accepting a good-for-nothing?

But what truly surprised the crowd was what happened next.

The smile on Gu Ruoyun's face grew more pronounced as she grinned from ear to ear.

"Apologies, I have no interest in your Weapon Refining Sect."

Bang!

As if a loud clap of thunder had struck, every single person in the crowd was dumbstruck.

"She rejected him..." they thought, "This good-for-nothing actually dared to reject Lord Hun Fei's invitation?"

Upon noticing the increasingly ugly look on Hun Fei's face, the crowd could not help but break into a sweat in their hearts for Gu Ruoyun's sake.

Chapter 33: The Shameless Weapon Refining Sect (2)

"You'd better think this through, little girl. Not everyone can receive the privilege to enter our Weapon Refining Sect! Especially not a good-for-nothing!" Hun Fei suppressed the raging fire in his heart and replied with a cold voice.

He was clearly furious at Gu Ruoyun for not knowing any better.

"I've told you that I'm not interested!" Gu Ruoyun glanced at Hun Fei's gloomy old face, "Besides, I trust my big brother's choice. He rejected an invitation from the Weapon Refining Sect long ago, which means that there is definitely something about the Weapon Refining Sect that he could not stand. And that is why my choice reflects those of my brother's."

That year, the Weapon Refining Sect sent a kind invitation and Gu Shengxiao rejected him in front of countless people. This would forever be a thorn in the deep recesses of his heart! Now, Gu Ruoyun had inadvertently reopened the wound. How could he not feel enraged?

A large amount of energy exploded from his body with a loud bang, collapsing nearby trees.

He fiercely gritted his teeth and fiercely replied, "Gu Ruoyun, are you truly going to reject the invitation to join our Weapon Refining Sect? You think that a good-for-nothing like you has the right to reject us? If it were not for the sake of..."

"If it were not for the sake of our Lady, I would not even bother to speak to this good-for-nothing!" He fumed inwardly.

"No matter how many times you ask, I, Gu Ruoyun, will never join your Weapon Refining Sect."

The young girl's tone was forceful that when it reached the ears of the crowd, it silenced their gossipings and speculations.

"Hmph!" Hun Fei scoffed, he turned to General Gu and said, "General Gu, is this your granddaughter? She truly has nothing to show for her upbringing!"

General Gu frowned. Honestly, he was initially shocked. But upon hearing Gu Ruoyun's response, his shock turned into anger.

"This girl certainly doesn't know what's good for her." He fumed, "Does she not know how much benefits a general will receive an established relationship with the Weapon Refining Sect? But she's done it now. Rejecting the offer right off the bat, without giving any thought to our family."

However, General Gu seemed to have forgotten that he was never kind to Gu Ruoyun. Why would she sacrifice herself for his sake?

"Lord Hun Fei, women have always had to obey their fathers and upon marriage, their husbands. She does not have a father, so she should obey me, her grandfather. Hence, I will make the decision. From now on, Gu Ruoyun belongs to the Weapon Refining Sect. Her livelihood has nothing to do with our Gu family."

Once he finished his declaration, General Gu glanced expressionlessly towards Gu Ruoyun.

At that moment, the young girl's clear eyes showed no emotion. She stared at him so calmly that he could feel his heart quaked.

While the genius Gu Shengxiao was Gu Ruoyun's elder brother, he was still an individual and therefore, would be no match for a large sect like the Weapon Refining Sect. Hence, sacrificing Gu Ruoyun to form an alliance with the Weapon Refining Sect was absolutely worth it!

General Gu felt calmer at the thought of this.

"Are you certain?"

Gu Ruoyun spoke calmly, no one could make out a single hint of emotion in her voice at all.

Luo Yin squeezed Gu Ruoyun's hand. She did not know why but the Gu Ruoyun before her felt like a stranger as if she had turned into a completely different person.

"Gu Ruoyun, I am your grandfather. I have the power to dictate your entire life!"

"Grandfather? Haha!" Gu Ruoyun could not help but burst into laughter, her eyes filled with mockery, "Forget about the fact that you are only my elder in name, not even the heavens have the right to dictate the course of my life! I will live my life on my own terms! I remained in the Gu family because you have all treated my brother well. The Gu family is his home. For his sake, I see nothing wrong in swallowing my anger. However, I believe that once he finds out about everything that you've done to me, he will definitely support my decision in leaving the Gu family!"

Chapter 34: The Shameless Weapon Refining Sect (3)

General Luo could not help but to clap his hands. He laughed gleefully, "Gu Ruoyun, I initially wanted to keep Luo Yin away from you for two reasons: One, it is because you are a member of the Gu family and I was worried that that old man from the Gu family would someday harm my daughter. The other reason is that you are far too weak. I, Luo Hongtian have always admired people with guts! Not too long ago, I heard rumors that your display of timidity was all an act. But I did not believe it. I see now, that the rumors are indeed true. Being born a good-for-nothing is not something you can control. But you can take control of your character. If you ever decide to leave the Gu family one day, you are more than welcome as a guest at my Luo household!"

Gu family? The Weapon Refining Sect? He had never seen the need to pander to them.

He had always been fearless. So how could he possibly be afraid of the Weapon Refining Sect?

Especially since Gu Ruoyun's statements were very much to his liking. Having a family like this was equivalent to having no family at all.

Hun Fei's expression visibly darkened. He glared viciously at General Luo but he kept his silence.

But the old man from the Gu family had never been the type of person to show self-restraint. He sneered, "Luo Hongtian. This matter concerns my Gu family. It has nothing to do with you! You are an outsider and have no right to meddle in our affairs! Seeing as this girl's parents are both dead, I have the right to make the decisions for her! Lord Hun Fei, from now on, Gu Ruoyun belongs to your Weapon Refining Sect. Whether you kill her or punish her, the decision is all yours."

Hearing this, Hun Fei nodded with satisfaction.

"At least the Gu family is more sensible," he thought.

Realizing that General Luo was about to speak up for her, Gu Ruoyun smiled and quickly stopped him, "General Luo, thank you for your good intentions. However, this time, the opponents are both the Gu family and the Weapon Refining Sect. I do not wish to drag the Luo family down with me. So please don't trouble yourself with this. Nevertheless, I, Gu Ruoyun, will never forget the kindness that you've shown me today."

A person who showers you with flattery when you are at the pinnacle of your success may not be sincere. But when a person who stands up for you in front of powerful enemies while you are considered a good-for-nothing, that person must be truly sincere.

Hence why she would forever remember General Luo's kind intentions.

"My answer remains the same, I will never join the Weapon Refining Sect!"

Gu Ruoyun slowly raised her head as the smile in her clear eyes slowly disappeared. She fixed her gaze upon the gloomy looking Hun Fei.

"Hmph."

Hun Fei scoffed coldly, "Since you refuse to see what's good for you, don't blame me for my lack of courtesy!"

Then, he appeared in front of Gu Ruoyun in one quick flash. But just as the energy in the palm of his hand was about to land on Gu Ruoyun, a loud bang sounded and the ground began to shake.

"What... What's going on?"

Hun Fei stumbled a few steps backward. He wrinkled his brow and asked, "The tremors seem to be coming from within the formation. Could it be that something has happened inside?"

The Lady of the Weapon Refining Sect had remained silent since the start of the commotion. It was only after the tremors had passed that she turned her attention towards the center of the formation. She was immediately rooted to the ground at the sight of what came next.

The formation exploded before their eyes, disintegrating into tiny stars, falling onto a man's exquisite, otherworldly hair.

No one in the crowd had ever seen such a beautiful man. His was the kind of beauty that could drive all living things into madness, a kind of beauty that could cause the downfall of nations. Yet even these idioms were not enough to describe the man's breathtaking beauty. It was as if red spider lilies now covered the ground and he was stepping into the field. His crimson robes floated along gracefully with his every move and his silvery hair danced along with the gentle breeze. Not even the heavens could have painted a more beautiful sight.

Chapter 35: The Shameless Weapon Refining Sect (4)

The flame between his brows was formidable yet seductive; it was unforgettable for anyone who had glimpsed it.

At this moment, the wronged man was staring miserably at Gu Ruoyun, "I don't want to be by myself so please don't leave me, alright?"

Er...

Everyone was speechless from astonishment - was this man a retard or was his mental age the type that is immature?

It was such a waste of his exceptionally good looks.

Everyone shook their head and felt sorry when they thought about it.

However, everyone had been so stunned by his looks that they overlooked the fact that he had walked out from the formation which had then exploded the instant he left it.

"I already told you to stop following me." Gu Ruoyun rubbed her forehead helplessly and thought, does this count as her obtaining an extra-relentless lackey?

"But I don't know who I am and I've also forgotten where I'm from. So let me follow you and if you don't like me calling you my wife then I'll stop doing that. Just don't abandon me, please?"

There was such sorrow in his eyes that he almost seemed like he was a pet being abandoned by Gu Ruoyun, the heartless owner.

Gu Panpan had originally been jealous that Gu Ruoyun was acquainted with this exceptional man. However, after listening to him speak, she could not help but titter, "Haha! Gu Ruoyun, I was at first perplexed that such a good-looking man could have any ties with you. It turns out that he's just an idiot who doesn't even

know who he is, only an idiot like him would fancy trash such as you!"

Honestly speaking though, Gu Panpan was still jealous of Gu Ruoyun.

Even if the man was a retard, his looks were just too perfect. Furthermore, for some reason, she can feel a pressure just from glancing at him.

As everyone was focused on Gu Ruoyun and the silver-haired man, no one noticed the change in Shi Yun's facial expression.

How could it be him...

This man was the man who has been appearing in her dreams since long ago.

She had thought that the dreams were not real but now, the man from her dreams was standing right in front of her in the flesh. However, from the beginning till the end, he had not looked at her even once and even acted cute and childish towards other women...

Her jealousy was like a hand which vehemently squeezed Shi Yun's heart, urging her to go up to him and tell him that she was the destined one.

Nonetheless, she was the daughter of the Weapon Refining Sect after all so she suppressed the urge, no matter how much it ate at her.

She took a deep breath and composed herself, "I must get that man!"

Since she has been dreaming about him since she was little, that just proves that they were destined to be together. So, in the end, that exceptional man can only belong to her. As for the others, they were merely cannon fodder along the way so they wouldn't be around for too long; their only purpose was to enhance their feelings...

On that thought, Shi Yun looked calculatively at Gu Ruoyun.

"Gu Ruoyun, who is this man?" General Gu's face was contorted slightly as he asked in a composed manner, "Who had allowed you to be friends with these indiscriminate bunch? My Gu family does not allow anyone to simply step in! If you aren't willing to break ties with him, you will be banished from the Gu family!"

Gu Ruoyun's lips arched, "Pardon me, but you don't have to do that because, right at this moment, I've decided to no longer be a part of the Gu family."

Chapter 36: The Shameless Weapon

Refining Sect (5)

General Gu's face looked like he had just swallowed a bug. The anger in his eyes was like spitting fire.

Some of the imperial officers who were not on good terms with him were enjoying the spectacle. They knew what General Gu had done in Azure Dragon Country. If he hadn't favored power and position so much, he wouldn't have driven his own granddaughter away.

"Hahaha!" General Luo chuckled out loud, "General Gu, did you hear that? Your granddaughter is no longer a part of the Gu family so you have no right to make decisions for her anymore."

As he spoke, there was a hint of mockery in his eyes and a sneering smile. He looked on as General Gu's face turned pale.

General Luo felt it in his gut that one day, General Gu will regret everything that he has ever done...

"Gu Ruoyun!" General Gu took a deep breath to suppress his urge to kill her, "You were born a Gu family member and you will die a Gu family member! I will absolutely not let you leave the Gu family."

Gu Ruoyun raised her eyes and looked at General Gu, many kinds of emotions were expressed through this one single glance.

There was the mockery, indifference and... disapproval.

It was as though, reflected in those clear eyes, the Gu family was no more.

"Is that so?" She smiled and the smile was so captivating that it shocked them all. "Then, Gu Yifeng, from this moment on, I alone announce my separation from the Gu family. Everyone in the Gu family, with the exception of Gu Shengxiao, no longer has any ties

to me whatsoever! You people from the Gu family never took care of me at all so why should I stay? Let's go!"

After saying that, she grabbed the silver-haired man by the hand and made her way through the crowd, walking towards the front.

General Gu's lungs felt like they were close to exploding as he coldly watched Gu Ruoyun's figure leave. "Stop right there!" he ordered.

Gu Ruoyun quickened her pace and she pulled the silver-haired man along as though she didn't hear him. She didn't turn around to look at General Gu even once.

"What are you all waiting for? Stop that rebellious woman!" General Gu shouted in anger. His gaze was fiercely trained on Gu Ruoyun like she was the enemy who had murdered his children.

Everyone circled Gu Ruoyun. At this moment, the young girl stopped in her tracks with her black silky hair waving slightly in the wind.

"I'd like to see who would dare to stop me?"

Her eyes were commanding and as sharp as a sword, sweeping through the guards who were surrounding her.

I'd like to see who would dare to stop me?

The crowd was so shocked that they couldn't even respond.

Was this young girl the actual good-for-nothing young lady of the Gu family? When had she acquired such an imposing manner...

Everyone came back to their senses when the young girl left. They were still not able to believe that the young girl before their very eyes was the same Gu Ruoyun from before!

"That good-for-nothing of the past has really changed a lot..."

"General Gu, we as outsiders can see Gu Ruoyan's transformation, don't tell me that you didn't notice it. I can guarantee that you will definitely regret the actions you've taken

today, hahaha. Yin'er, let's go."

General Luo guffawed, disregarding General Gu's ashen face as he quickly disappeared from sight.

General Gu clenched his fist and sneered: "I'll regret it? Probably, by that time, the one who'll be regretting things is Gu Ruoyun! She was the one who gave up the Weapon Refining Sect's invitation and she'd even left the Gu family. We'll see who is the remorseful one in the future!. With her capabilities, it's going to be a problem to her whether she could survive on her own on this mainland! Just you all wait and see!"

Chapter 37: The Jealousy Of Shi Yun (1)

On a busy street in Azure Dragon Country, Gu Ruoyun stopped walking and turned her head to the man who had been following behind her. She paused and said, "I don't know who you are so you don't have to follow me. I'm already troubled enough with this current matter and bringing you along will just mean even more trouble."

No matter what, she had too many enemies. If she were to bring him along, she would only be putting him in danger.

The silver-haired man pulled a face and he looked grievously like an abandoned kitten at Gu Ruoyun, "But I only wish to follow you."

"There're a lot of people who want to kill me. If you follow me, aren't you afraid that you'll be killed too?"

"I won't let others kill you!"

At that instant, Gu Ruoyun wasn't sure whether she was mistaken or not, but she could clearly feel the silver-haired man's manner become more imposing with his body emanating hostility. When she frowned and looked at the man she was only met with a pair of sad eyes.

Maybe what she had felt just now was only her misconception...

"Since you put it that way, then you'll just have to follow me. Oh right, what's your name?"

She didn't know why she had compromised at that moment, it was as though she had been drawn by something which stopped her from chasing this man away.

This was a weird feeling. After all, no matter in her past or present lives, she has never taken pity on anyone before.

"Qianbei Ye, I somehow can remember that my name is Qianbei Ye but I'm not clear about the rest."

Qianbei Ye?

Gu Ruoyun froze for a while, "This ancient surname, Qianbei, is really rare. Are you really sure that you don't know where you came from?"

As he heard that, Qianbei Ye wrinkled his eyebrows in pain when several images flashed through his mind. The images had flashed by too quickly for him to get a hold of them.

Just as he was about to continue to recall his memories, a powerful force suddenly rammed into his mind and caused an explosive sharp pain in his entire head.

"I can only remember the name Qianbei Ye, the rest is just a blur."

"There's a seal, I feel like my memories have been sealed away." Qianbei Ye loosened his brows and said with certainty.

"A seal?" Gu Ruoyun arched her brows slightly, "We'll have to wait until after Zixie has woken for me to understand the type of seal that's in your body and the person who had put that seal in you."

Zixie has been in a deep slumber for a period of time and it was unknown when he will regain consciousness...

"Xiao Yun, where are we going now?" Qianbei Ye's gaze followed Gu Ruoyun's voice. Only very few people could resist that innocent expression paired with his exceptional looks.

All of a sudden, the ladies on the street looked at his direction. When they saw the Gu family's good-for-nothing daughter standing next to him, they immediately thought of a fresh flower which had been stuck into a heap of cow dung.

This man, whose beauty can overthrow cities and ruin states, is being contaminated just by having that useless trash standing next to him.

"To the Hundred Herb Hall!"

Gu Ruoyun lifted her eyes with a relieved smile on the corners of her lips. From now on, her power shall rise slowly.

...

At the Ling household.

Ling Xi ignored the person who was chasing behind him and hurriedly charged out. He ran breathlessly into the study and panted.

"Grandfather! That good-for-nothing, Gu Ruoyun, is not dead!"

"What?"

Ling Yi's hand stiffened slightly and he lifted his head to look at his grandchild with a slight frown, "You're saying that Gu Ruoyun is still alive? How is that possible? I personally saw her fall over the cliff."

Chapter 38: The Jealousy Of Shi Yun (2)

"It's true!"

Ling Xi then told Ling Yi what had transpired.

As he listened to the story, Ling Yi's face soon turned unsightly, "Gu Ruoyun is incredibly lucky to be alive. However, my heart won't be at peace until she dies! This time, I'm afraid that General Gu has made a mistake in letting that woman leave the Gu family. It's their loss indeed! It's a pity that a girl like her wasn't born into my Ling family and she'd even incurred our hatred. Since that's the case, I've got no choice but to order her death."

Even though Gu Ruoyun's strength is still relatively weak now, he has a feeling that one day, her growth would be unstoppable.

If only she had been the Ling family's daughter, he would definitely have trained her properly. What a waste...

Ling Xi shook his head in disappointment at the thought: "Xi'er, if we haven't become her enemies, I'd really hoped that you would marry her. Though I did think of her as a good-for-nothing at the beginning, when we were at the Heavenly Spirit Formation I could feel that she wasn't the hopeless case we had thought she was. However, it would be impossible to get back into good terms with her so I can only let her die."

"But grandfather, what should we do?" Ling Xi paused before asking.

Just as Ling Yi was contemplating on how to defeat Gu Ruoyun, a voice sounded from outside the door, "Master, the eldest daughter of the Weapon Refining Sect's Master has come to visit."

"The eldest daughter of the Weapon Refining Sect's Master?"

Ling Yi's mouth opened in surprise. There really wasn't a reason for this visit and he can't think of why the eldest daughter would suddenly want to meet him.

To be frank, any ordinary person, such as General Gu, would be ecstatic if they were to hear that someone from the Weapon Refining Sect was paying them a visit. However, that wasn't the case for Ling Yi. He understood his own capabilities so it was impossible for the eldest daughter of the Weapon Refining Sect to visit without having some other motive for him.

But he can't think of any way that he could be of use to the Weapon Refining Sect.

"Quick, let her in."

Ling Yi replied hurriedly after composing himself.

Just as the order was given, a person dressed in white glided into the room. Her black, silky hair cascaded down like a waterfall and her captivating beauty was suffocating.

"Master Ling, Shi Yun had come uninvited and I hope that you would pardon my intrusion."

There was a gentle smile on Shi Yun's face and her presence was like a comfortable soft breeze. She may be the eldest daughter of the Weapon Refining Sect's Master but there wasn't an ounce of arrogance on her. This made everyone involuntary want to get closer to her.

"Since Lady Shi Yun has said so, I do not feel imposed upon." Ling Yi immediately stood up and faced her, "I'm just unclear what directive Lady Shi Yun might have for me today?"

"It's not a directive to be exact but I heard that there's an upcoming duel between the Young Master of the Ling family and Gu Ruoyun. Is that true?" Shi Yun chuckled softly as a pair of beautiful eyes swept towards Ling Xi who was standing beside Ling Yi.

Her look almost charmed Ling Xi as he stared lewdly at Shi Yun's body.

Shi Yun was disgusted when she saw the other's perverted eyes

but her face didn't show it. She laughed gently as she said, "I have a new technique that can immediately increase Ling Xi's capacity to the level of a Martial Warrior. Hopefully, with this, he can defeat Gu Ruoyun."

It was widely known that the Qi Collection ranks was a preparatory stage for beginners to strengthen themselves before they can reach the Martial Warrior rank. Only after breaking through the eighth level in the Qi Collection rank and attaining the lowest level of a Martial Warrior would they be officially considered to be on the path to becoming a cultivator.

Once he heard what Shi Yun was offering, Ling Xi's heart squeezed and the look in his eyes changed from amazement to surprise.

If he could break through to the first stage of a Martial Warrior then Gu Ruoyun, that lowlife, would definitely have to kneel and call him grandfather!

Chapter 39: The Jealousy Of Shi Yun (3)

"Lady Shi Yun, may I ask you a few questions?" Ling Yi asked, frowning. He was not as brash as his grandson, Ling Xi.

"Ask away."

"Firstly, will this technique result in any side effects? And secondly, why are you helping us in defeating Gu Ruoyun? What are the intentions of the Weapon Refining Sect? If you wanted to deal with her, why isn't the Weapon Refining Sect handling it personally? Why do you choose to utilize people like us instead?"

Shi Yun smiled, taking no offense towards Ling Yi's bluntness, "I can assure you, the technique I am about to teach you will not result in any side effects! As for why we need your help in defeating her... You've probably heard of the humiliation that the Weapon Refining Sect is suffering, despite not being in attendance at the imperial palace today. We want to teach her a lesson. And to answer your last question..."

She paused hesitantly, then continued, "Only strong powers within the mainland have the right to know of this affair. However, since you've asked, then I'll explain it to you. Have you heard of the Three Great Authorities, Master Ling?"

"The Three Great Authorities?" Ling Yi stared at Shi Yun, perplexed, "I have never heard of the Three Great Authorities."

"The Three Great Authorities consist of three great and powerful cultivators. Among them, the Immortal Realm and Courts of Hell are the two great powers clashing against each other. The Spirit Sect is considered a neutral party. These three great powers are the first in rank in all of the mainlands. They have determined a set of rules, and one of them includes this: Members of powerful sects that hold top-ranking titles are not allowed to bring harm upon the common folk at will! Anyone who defies this rule will be hunted and killed by the Three Great Authorities!"

Of course, that was not the only reason.

The other reason was that Gu Ruoyun's older brother, the most talented cultivator of their generation in Azure Dragon Country, had joined the Spirit Sect masters as a disciple.

Only powerfully ranked sect masters like herself would know of this, for even General Gu himself was kept in the dark. Otherwise, he probably would not have dared to treat Gu Ruoyun so poorly, even if he swallowed one hundred spoonfuls of liquid courage.

Hence, the Weapon Refining Sect can only plot against Gu Ruoyun in absolute secret, and the Ling family just happened to be perfect for cannon fodder! So when the time comes for Gu Shengxiao to return, he would only question the Ling family, instead of dragging the Weapon Refining Sect into the mud.

"Master Ling, I've said all that needs to be said. What do you think? Remember, Gu Ruoyun must not die! I want you all the cripple her in front of everyone, then hand her over to the Weapon Refining Sect. I do not wish for anyone else to know about this. You both understand what I mean."

Just then, the shadow of the silver-haired man flashed across Shi Yun's mind, and she unconsciously clenched her fist.

Ling Yi paused momentarily to deliberate, then replied, "Very well. Whatever you command, Lady Shi Yun, I dare not defy."

Shi Yun suppressed the jealousy and rage she felt, then stood up and smiled, "Once you complete this task, I will award Ling Xi with a place at the Weapon Refining Sect. I hope you won't disappoint me."

She then turned around and made her way out the door. The gentle smile on her face promptly disappeared, and a cold, sinister look stood in its place.

Gu Ruoyun, she thought, you are not fit to be with that man! When the time comes, I will make you sweep your dignity off the

floor, right in front of him, so he will see your pathetic, crushing, humiliation by the hands of others! Then, I will drag you back to the Weapon Refining Sect with me, and absorb your mental energy!

It was clear that the distance between your standards and his was far too wide. Hence, yours will be a doomed union and in this lifetime, only I, Shi Yun, the talented genius of the Weapon Refining Sect, would be the perfect match for that man, to stand and fight by his side! Besides, there's nothing good about you at all!

Once Shi Yun had left, a sense of calm quickly arrived in Ling Yi's heart. He then spoke in a cold, emotionless voice, "Find Gu Ruoyun."

Chapter 40: Qianbei Ye Is Jealous (1)

Now, there were only a few people moving around in the Hundred Herb Hall and Gu Ruoyun saw Elder Yu with his eyes closed when she walked in. As though noticing her presence, Elder Yu opened his eyelids slightly and he chuckled lightly, "You came?"

"Yes, I came."

Considering the fact that there were others in the hall, Gu Ruoyun only nodded and said nothing else.

"Let's go, we'll talk in the inner chamber. Furthermore, there's someone who would like to meet you."

"Sure."

Ever since she last left the Hundred Herb Hall, Gu Ruoyun have not had time to return to this place. Coming back this time, not only did she found a place to stay but most importantly there were a few orders that needed to be passed on.

Even more so, this would be her first step towards rising upwards.

In the elegant inner chamber, a light breeze gently passed by, with the snow-white curtains swaying along.

Just as Gu Ruoyun entered, she saw the man standing with his face to her - he was clad in prime luxurious silk clothing, his manners were awe-inspiring and imposing. Just by staring at his back, there was already a huge imposing pressure, which really said something about this man's ability.

"Young master, I have brought the person that you wanted."

"Young master?"

Gu Ruoyun's brow arched slightly. Could it be that this man is the driving force behind the Hundred Herb Hall?

Frankly speaking, the people of Azure Dragon Country only knew

that the Hundred Herb Hall had a powerful faculty behind it. But those who have offended the power of the Hundred Herb Hall would disappear the very next day. Nonetheless, no one knew who the owner behind the Hundred Herb Hall was; it was a mystery to all of them.

Thus, the moment the man turned around, amazement flashed within Gu Ruoyun's eyes.

Dignified and refined - there were no two words more suitable to describe this man. When he smiled, it was as if she was being caressed on the face by a soft breeze. It was very comfortable.

Also, Gu Ruoyun did not know why she had this urge get closer to him...

"You are Gu Ruoyun? Gu Tian's daughter? Not bad, you have Gu Tian's former vigor. Those who have ridiculed you as a nobody are too blind to see."

The man could see Gu Tian's former shadow on the young girl in front of him, which caused him to develop favorable impression towards her.

Gu Ruoyun was stupefied, "You knew my father?"

"That's right. Your father and I could be considered as an old friend. It's a pity the heavens were jealous of heroic geniuses, who was a permanent loss for this land. Luckily, that fellow was capable enough to give birth to a son who was accepted as a disciple by the Spirit Sect. Now, with an exceptional daughter like you, I don't know how relieved he would be if only he could see this."

The man slightly sighed.

Nonetheless, when she heard his answer, Gu Ruoyun felt a tug on her heart. Old man Gu never mentioned where his older brother went and now, she finally knew his whereabouts. Spirit Sect?

What kind of ability does this Spirit Sect have?

"You are the master of the Hundred Herb Hall?"

She lifted her eyes a little and looked at the man in front of her.

The man chuckled shortly, "Yes, I am the master of the Hundred Herb Hall. My name is Dongfang Shaoze, but your parents and I were old friends, so if you don't mind you could call me uncle. I know a thing or two about your parents, it's just that I cannot tell you about it now."

Gu Ruoyun finally understood why the Hundred Herb Hall changed things around so easily.

At that time, she was only trying out her luck and was completely hopeless. Who knew that the reason why everything went smoothly was because of this man behind the scene?

How ironic it was for her to think that she had such good luck to that extent...

Gu Ruoyun laughed sardonically, "Young master Dongfang, I originally thought I got the Hundred Herb Hall by my own capabilities, but now it seemed that wasn't the case."

Chapter 41: Qianbei Ye Is Jealous (2)

"That is one of the reason, the second would be the fact that you, little girl do actually have the skills." The man touched Gu Ruoyun's hand as he smiled, his eyes looked at her dotingly, "I really don't know what kind of life you have had with the Gu family for a young fifteen-year-old girl like you to become this mature and cold at the same time. That really hurt me as your uncle, as I am still your parent's friend, in any case."

Dongfang Shaoze sighed helplessly, but the corner of his lips was filled with laughter.

Elder Yu stood by the side and watched it all. His heart was filled with grief; he understood that the young master wanted to meet Gu Ruoyun earlier on, but he did not want to drag her into the miseries of the Dongfang family which was why they could never meet.

Even if they do meet, they could not reunite...

"Hm? This person is?"

Suddenly, Dongfang Shaoze felt a violent foreboding air from behind Gu Ruoyun. He then turned his head and looked at the silver-haired man that was behind her. The moment his eyes met the man's bloody eyes, his heart skipped a beat. Just how many people has he killed to have such a pair of heartless murderous eyes? Especially with the rage that was coming from him, Dongfang Shaoze's body clearly tensed up.

"Oh, you mean him?" Gu Ruoyun glanced at Qianbei Ye, "I picked him up outside."

Picked up?

The corner of Dongfang Shaoze's lip twitched. Did she really think that this person was like some stray cat or dog that could simply be picked off the streets? However, just at that moment,

Dongfang Shaoze experienced what was known as the swift face switching.

The man who was formerly displeased when he saw Dongfang Shaoze immediately changed into a sad expression the moment Gu Ruoyun turned her head. With that look, he would have thought someone else had bullied him if he had not known...

"Young master Dongfang, you wouldn't mind arranging two rooms for us right?"

Gu Ruoyun's question snapped Dongfang Shaoze back from his stupor. He shook his head and smiled, "From now on, you're the master of the Hundred Herb Hall; this is your territory now. If you need rooms to be arranged, you can do it by yourself. The reason I returned to the Azure Dragon Country was because I heard that you've left the Heavenly Spirit Formation. I should be leaving in a couple more days but I'll leave Yu Lao here to help you out."

"Good," Gu Ruoyun nodded, "Xiao Ye, let's go."

Qianbei Ye gave Dongfang Shaoze a look before turning around and followed Gu Ruoyun, leaving the Hundred Herb Hall.

The moment they disappeared, Dongfang Shaoze's face sunk a little by little.

"Elder Yu investigate that man's identity for me!"

"Young master?" There was a glimpse of astonishment in the depth of Yu Lao's eyes, "Does that man have any problems? I cannot feel any spiritual force pulse on him."

Dongfang Shaoze sneered, "I got a gut feeling that that man is so powerful that even father wouldn't be a match for him!"

"What?"

Elder Yu's eyes widened in surprise. Even the master of the household could not be his match? The fact that the master of the household was already at the Martial King level and if even the

master cannot defeat him, just how powerful could he be?

"I want to know the purpose of why this man appeared before Yun'er! I will absolutely not allow anyone to hurt my sister's flesh and blood, no matter whether it is that man or the Gu family!"

It wasn't the fact that he did not know about the incident where Gu Ruoyun was slowly beaten to death by old man Gu but instead, he was too late, or else he would not have allowed his sister's offspring to be taken away like that.

"I didn't really intend to help Yun'er grow since I wanted to see her true capabilities, but that doesn't mean I can tolerate these behaviors from them! Especially with what happened at the palace today! The Gu family... They still can't be terminated for now but we can cause a little trouble here and there. Elder Yu, help me prepare. I am paying the Gu family a visit!"

Chapter 42: Qianbei Ye Is Jealous (3)

In the compound, the atmosphere was especially disheartening - Qianbei Ye's exceptional features were sorrowful, and the way he looked was just as if he got humiliated.

"Xiao Yun, he touched your head just now. Can I touch it too?"

Gu Ruoyun was dazed, "Are you having a fever?"

Qianbei Ye was very dejected, "Why can he touch you but I can't?"

"Xiao Ye, any more of this nonsense from you and I'm going to be mad." Gu Ruoyun grimaced purposely and said a little fiercely, "Since you've chosen to follow me, then you should obey me; got it?"

Qianbei Ye panicked a little when he heard her say that and responded carefully, "I won't do that again. I'll be good and obedient. Xiao Yun, please don't be mad at me and chase me away. Is that okay?"

Gu Ruoyun softened when she saw how careful the man was, "Sure, I'm not mad anymore. Let's go."

"You're the best, Xiao Yun."

Qianbei Ye smiled. To say that that the smile could topple countries and ruin cities was not the perfect explanation, but it was as though fireworks had lit up around him, an unsurpassed beauty of that generation.

For a while, Gu Ruoyun lost her train of thoughts. She never thought that a man could smile so beautifully; so beautiful that it could suffocate others, like he was the best highlight of both heaven and earth and everyone else around him were just accessories to compliment him.

Of course, the agreement before was that he does not speak at

all...

If he does and with just one word, people's illusions of him would just vanish.

"Xiao Yun, I don't want to sleep by myself. I'm afraid of the dark, can I sleep with you?"

"..."

"Xiao Yun, why is your body different than mine? What are those two humps on your chest? Can I touch it?"

"..."

If Gu Ruoyun did not consider that seal in the man's mind, she would definitely suspect that this fellow was faking it to take advantage of her!

What kind of questions were those? He was obviously teasing her!

Gu Ruoyun took a deep breath so that she could suppress the urge to throw him out.

"If you don't shut up, get out!"

...

Meantime, in the Gu family's entrance hall, old man Gu smashed everything he could get from the table onto the floor. His face was so cloudy that water dripped down from it, even the favored child, Gu Panpan could only stand by the side and dared not make a peep.

"Gu Ruoyun! Good! You couldn't be better!"

Master Gu sneered, "You're actually this outrageous! Certainly, it's because of the early death of your parents that no one taught you, or else why would our Gu family produce such a disappointing bane of existence? If I had known this earlier, I wouldn't have had Tian Er marry that unknown woman! And a bastard like her wouldn't have been born!"

Back then, his son, Gu Tian was the genius of the land. He was refined, elegant and he even shocked the world by becoming the Martial King at a young age. He was his entire hope. If it wasn't for his passing, how would the Gu family have fallen to this stage? If he had not died, maybe the Gu family would have gone out of the Azure Dragon Country and became equals with the powers similar to the Weapon Refining Sect.

"It is indeed that every capable man has a good woman behind his back, not someone who would burden him! If Tian Er hadn't married the unknown woman, he wouldn't have ended up like that. We couldn't even find his dead body!"

It was obvious that Master Gu did not mourn the death of his son but rather, he felt sorry that the Gu family lost a genius like him.

However, since the beginning, the old man did not know the true identity of Gu Ruoyun's mother. The reason her mother hid her identity when she married Gu Tian that year was that the Dongfang family had already investigated thoroughly about everything there was about the Gu family. With the character of old man Gu and if Dongfang Yu had been hell-bent on it, they would have definitely cut ties!

Chapter 43: Dongfang Shaoze's Revenge (1)

As it was, Dongfang Yu never mentioned about her background after she was married into the Gu family. Just because Gu Tian was the legendary genius at that time; with his protection, old man Gu did not dare to humiliate Dongfang Yu.

When he heard that, the Second Master Gu involuntarily lowered his head. After all, his older brother Gu Tian's death had something to do with him.

"General, sir."

At that moment, a voice quickly reached in. It was followed by the Gu family's slave running in from the outside and breathed heavily, "Master, young master Dongfang has come for a visit."

Dongfang family?

Old man Gu blanked out for a while but immediately sat upright and excitedly said, "What did you say? The young master of the Dongfang family came for a visit?"

Even though the Dongfang family's status was not as powerful as the Weapon Refining Sect but they came really close. Now that the Gu family had just offended the Weapon Refining Sect, if they could get the Dongfang family to back them up, even then the Weapon Refining Sect would need to consider their actions.

Furthermore, this relationship between the Dongfang family would benefit him in many ways.

"Hurry! Let him in quickly!"

Old man Gu hurriedly calm himself down when he thought about it and replied in a surprised manner.

Just as his voice died down, a soft chuckled came from the outside. When the crowd lifted their heads and looked towards that direction, all they saw was a flurry of silk clothing entering

the room. The man was waving the folded fan in his hand, and his jade-like eminent face hung a warm smile.

"General Gu, I hope you forgive me for my sudden visit."

Old man Gu swiftly got to his feet. His chrysanthemum-liked wrinkled face was filled with a flattering smile, his behavior was as though he could not wait to be Dongfang Shaoze's lackey.

"Young master Dongfang, what business do you have to grace us with your wonderful presence?"

"Oh," Dongfang Shaoze arched his brows slightly as he purposely dragged on his voice, with a surprised tone he said, "You don't know the purpose of me visiting you, General?"

"Well..."

Old man Gu was a little confused, he looked questioningly at Dongfang Shaoze, "This old man really doesn't understand why Dongfang Shaoze would visit."

"You see," Dongfang Shaoze raised the corner of his lips, opened his folded fan and said, "I myself have been good friends with both Gu Tian and his wife for many years now. It's just that after many years of closing off for training, I haven't seen them for quite some time and after coming out from that, I heard that they were dead."

Dongfang Shaoze shook his head in regret.

His regret was not an act but it came from the heart. No matter whether it was for Gu Tian or his own sister, he only had admiration and respect for them. It was so unfortunate that two geniuses such as those two had fallen just like that...

"Sister Yu and I were sworn as sister and brother that year. I, as a brother, couldn't see them in their final moments so I was wondering whether General Gu could bring me to my sister's memorial site?"

If it wasn't for the hostility of those in the Dongfang family,

Dongfang Shaoze would have caused a scene at the Gu's household and would not have only used his identity as a sworn brother to show up here...

Nonetheless, now that he could finally address her as 'sister' in front of the Gu family, that would count as a proof of her identity.

Old man Gu was stunned and hesitantly said, "Even though they've passed away, no bodies were found. So..."

"There are no bodies but there must be cenotaphs, could I go and pay them a visit?"

General Gu's face gradually became unpleasant but he could not give Dongfang Shaoze an answer.

That bitch actually hid the fact that she was sworn as siblings with the young master of the Dongfang family. If he had known about that the Dongfang family had their back, how could the Gu household cripple to this stage?

Chapter 44: Dongfang Shaoze's Revenge (2)

"Well, I'm afraid that wouldn't be ideal." Old man Gu finally understood Dongfang Shaoze's purpose for visiting. It made it more embarrassing to know that his angry self back then did not have any cenotaph for the both of them. Even more, he had even denied them from entering the ancestral temple.

Gu Panpan really couldn't bear to let it continue. With a chilling look, she said, "What eligibility do that pair of paramour have to get a cenotaph in their name? Our Gu family will not have it! That thief and whore are not fit to bear the name Gu, especially that woman! Gu Tian, that genius was so bewitched with her that she had him around her fingers, and they gave birth to those pair of monsters! Do you still dare to mention about the cenotaph now?"

Ultimately, Gu Panpan had always been dissatisfied with Gu Ruoyun and her older brother. Not only did Gu Shengxiao took away her brother's place as a genius, Gu Ruoyun even shamed the Gu family. People like them should have been dead a long time ago! The heavens were really blind.

"Panpan, shut your mouth!"

Old man Gu's face changed dramatically, then he quickly lifted his head and looked at Dongfang Shaoze.

Dongfang Shaoze's lips were still smiling, there were no hints of anger. But at that moment, those originally warm eyes were filled with cold shards, training sharply at Gu Panpan.

"Your Gu family has such an excellent upbringing, training such a lady. At any rate, Gu Tian and his wife are still her elders and she'd actually say this kind of things; it has truly opened my eyes."

To be honest, Dongfang Shaoze knew that the Gu family did not have cenotaphs for them.

That's why. The purpose of his visitation was simple - it was to

cause trouble! The Dongfang family did not allow him to meddle in this matter as there were also the three main sanctions controlling from above. But he was just paying a visit to honor his sister and brother-in-law, so there was nothing wrong with that right?

The Gu family did not have a cenotaph for his older sister, so he should be mad right? Even the three main sanctions would have nothing to say about that.

"Young master Dongfang, please do not be offended. Panpan is still young and she's still not sensible," old man Gu wiped the cold sweat on his forehead and awkwardly explained.

Dongfang Shaoze scoffed, "Young? In my family, even a ten-year-old girl knows how to respect her elders. I can see that your granddaughter is already fifteen or sixteen years old, yet she still doesn't understand the principle of respecting her elders and cherishing those who are younger than her? On my way here, I've caught wind on how all of you've abused the daughter who was left behind by Gu Tian and his wife. I wouldn't have believed it at least. No matter what, the Gu family blood still flows in her veins. But now that I've seen young lady Gu yelling profanities about her own uncle, I realized that there's nothing impossible when it comes to all of you!"

"Young master Dongfang, it isn't like that. Do allow me to explain to you first..."

"There is no need for explanations anymore! Gu Shengxiao went off to train with teachers from other places but left Gu Ruoyun on her own. Within the next three days, I have to see her well and unhurt. If she loses one hair on her, or if you refuse to hand her over to me, then do not blame me when I turn your Gu household upside down!"

With that said, Dongfang Shaoze waved his cuff. Not even sparing a glance at sweating old man Gu, he turned towards the door and walked out.

Yun Er, uncle could only do just this much for you...

"We're doomed, really doomed this time."

Plop.

Old man Gu's knees buckled and he fell onto the floor, mumbling non-stop.

Gu Panpan tightened her lips disapprovingly, "Isn't he just another member of the Dongfang family? That's really nothing incredible about it. Was it really necessary of him to humiliate us like that? And he has obviously taken sides with Gu Ruoyun; those who help her were never good and would be struck to death by lightning sooner or later!"

Chapter 45: Dongfang Shaoze's Revenge (3)

"Shut up!"

Second Master Gu slapped Gu Panpan's face with his palm and shouted furiously, "Are you trying to cause more trouble? What kind of people is the Dongfang family? Do you think we can afford to mess with them? You, on the other hand, he came here with an ill intention and you still had to say that kind of things which would bring down the Gu Family even more."

Since she was young, when had Gu Panpan ever been beaten by others? Not to mention that the person who hit her was her own beloved father.

"Dear husband, Panpan's your daughter; how could you do that to her?" The Second Madam Gu lovingly embraced Gu Panpan in her arms, "If he wants to find Gu Ruoyun, why don't we just give her to him? We don't need that kind of garbage in our Gu family anyway. If anyone wants her, they can have her."

The Second Master Gu laughed bitterly - how can this issue be so simple? With Gu Ruoyun's strong-headed personality, how could it be possible for her to obediently go with them to meet Dongfang Shaoze?

Moreover, Dongfang Shaoze wanted her unscathed, which means they could not physically make her or else she would complain to him. Wouldn't that just leave the Gu family with unbearable consequences?

Finally, old man Gu came to his senses and ordered, "Someone, go inquire news about Gu Ruoyun!"

"Yes, General."

The Gu family was still influential in the Azure Dragon Country and they had many informers. So not long after, the scout who was assigned to find out Gu Ruoyun's location came back. Besides, he

even brought back an announcement with him.

"You said Gu Ruoyun had entered the Hundred Herb Hall and never came out?"

Old man Gu's darted his eyes and said, "Although the authority behind the Hundred Herb Hall is powerful, the actual owner is still unknown. However, the Dongfang family mean what they say. For the sake of not transgressing the Dongfang family, I have no choice but to have people to invite Gu Ruoyun back from the Hundred Herb Hall."

"Father, let me go handle this matter."

"Good."

The old man looked at his own son and nodded slightly, "Then you'll go do that. No matter what, you have to get Gu Ruoyun back!"

"Father, grandfather, I would like to go to."

Gu Panpan hastily stepped forth, her eyes flashing with anger.

It was all because of that useless Gu Ruoyun; if it was not for her, how would she have been beaten by her father? At times like these, it would be absolutely preposterous that she would still want to return to the Gu household. She would definitely not allow that woman to come back!

Obviously, Gu Panpan still thought that Dongfang Shaoze was just someone Gu Ruoyun had found. And her sole purpose was to have her father personally invite her back...

"You are not allowed to go!" Old man Gu frowned, "Don't you think you've caused enough trouble? This time, you're not allowed to go on this operation with your father and you will stay in this house obediently. You're not allowed to go anywhere!"

"Grandfather!" Gu Panpan stomped her foot angrily as she bit her lower lips unwillingly.

However, old man Gu did not pay heed to her tantrum and waved his second son off. Then he said, "It's getting late, you should hurry, in case the Dongfang family comes back to look for trouble."

The father and son of the Gu family's thinking were simple. No matter what, the Second Master Gu was still Gu Ruoyun's second uncle. Since he was personally inviting her back, it was accounted that this young girl would run back willingly and gratefully.

Yet, it was clear that things would not go the way they had predicted.

Now in the Hundred Herb Hall, the Second Master Gu smiled familiarly and said, "Shopkeeper Zhao, why don't you make an exception and let us meet Gu Ruoyan."

"I've already said numerous times, Gu Ruoyun is not in our Hundred Herb Hall. Both of you should kindly return."

Chapter 46: Dongfang Shaoze's Revenge (4)

Shopkeeper Zhao did not even lift his eyes, he just continued arranging the account books in his hands.

"Shopkeeper Zhao, I am Gu Ruoyun's second uncle. Why am I not allowed to see her? Even if the Hundred Herb Hall is that all-powerful, that doesn't mean you can kidnap citizens!" The second son of the Gu family's face became unsightly, his tone of voice was heavier.

Upon hearing that, shopkeeper Zhao put down the book in his hand, looked at him and scoffed, "You're her second uncle? Why have I heard that all of you have banished her out of the Gu household? You also told her to not regret her decision! Based on this situation now, is the Gu family sorry that they let her go? Even to the extent that you defiled the Hundred Herb Hall! We, the Hundred Herb Hall will never kidnap anybody no matter what! So it would be so kind for all of you to leave - there is no one here that you want."

Because of the Hundred Herb Hall's buzzing business, there was quite a crowd who came to purchase herbs.

When they heard the conversation between both parties, they could not help but turned their gaze towards the second son of the Gu family.

It was General Gu who said so in the first place - he allowed Gu Ruoyun to leave the Gu household and warned her not to regret it! What was happening now? Could it be that it was as shopkeeper Zhao claimed? That the Gu family was showing remorse?

The second son of the Gu family's face turned pale then red, "Shopkeeper Zhao, are you seriously not going to release her? Gu Ruoyun's name is still in the Gu family's records, she hasn't officially left the Gu household. She's still considered a part of the Gu family, what you're doing now is absolutely unreasonable!"

The customers in the Hundred Herb Halls were amazed when they heard this.

They've met with lowlifes before but have never seen such degree of shamelessness.

It was them who declared Gu Ruoyun's banishment from the Gu household, and now they claimed that Gu Ruoyun still has not left them. How thick skinned can they be?

"Since the second Master Gu don't wish to leave... By all means, please do as you please. I didn't kidnap Gu Ruoyun and I have no one to hand over to you."

Shopkeeper Zhao lowered his head and continued arranging the account books after saying that, not sparing a glance at the pale-faced second son of the Gu family.

It was such a joke since the young master had already announced that no one from the Gu family could see Gu Ruoyun! Were they brave enough to disobey that? However, these bastards were too shameless, by going to the extent to say that they actually kidnapped the young lady...

The Hundred Herb Hall was given by the young master to the young lady. Even if he had all the courage in the world, he still would not dare to do so.

This was just framing him as being unrighteous.

Shopkeeper Zhao's hatred for the second son of the Gu family increased as he thought of it.

But this time, because of the calamity of the Gu family's second son, little did he know that because of that one sentence he said, Shopkeeper Zhao now despised him.

Seeing that begging Shopkeeper Zhao had no effect, the second son of the Gu family made his decision and shouted towards the direction of the Hundred Herb Hall, "Gu Ruoyun, I know you're in there. Come out now! Don't think that just because you sucked up

to the Hundred Herb Hall you could do as you please, such as not even listening to what your uncle told you. Don't forget, there is still the Gu family blood flowing inside you; you are born as a Gu family member and will die as a Gu family ghost! Even if your grandfather had his faults, can't you excuse him since he's old? If you don't come out soon, the Gu family will be in trouble and you will forever be remembered as that wicked transgressor. Your name will be soiled for thousands of years! By that time, even if you do feel sorry it would've been too late!"

Shopkeeper Zhao was dumbfounded for a while. He did not think that the second son of the Gu family would pull off something like that. Once he regained his train of thoughts, his face was completely paled and he yelled, "Someone, get him out of here!"

It's done and hopefully, the young lady was not startled, or else the young master would not let them off the hook.

At that moment, two buff man walked out of the Hundred Herb Hall. They lifted the second son of the Gu family, threw him out through the door and onto the streets, drawing attention from the passing bystanders.

Chapter 47: Eternal Glory? Everlasting Infamy? (1)

"What has happened outside?"

In the courtyard, Gu Ruoyun was sitting in a gazebo when she heard a sound from the outside. Her delicate brows arched slightly.

Elder Yu crinkled his brows in dissatisfaction. That shopkeeper Zhao is extremely useless, that he could not even handle a single person and had even startled the young lady. The young master had made it clear that absolutely no one from the Gu family can meet the young lady, or else how could he help the young lady to seek revenge.

"It is nothing, just a small fry," Elder Yu shook his head and smiled, "Young lady, you have requested for me. What may I do for you?"

"I have some matters that would require Elder Yu's assistance," Gu Ruoyun's finger gently glided across the stone pillar of the gazebo, a faint smile displayed on her exquisite and beautiful face, "I need a lethal team! As for the manpower, I believe Elder Yu will definitely help me to find them."

She had too many enemies and alone, she cannot achieve much. If she truly wanted to have a firm stand on this land, she needed an extremely powerful force!

That force, would be her starting point.

"Young lady, this old slave understands your meaning. This old slave will now go assemble the necessary manpower for you."

"Hold on."

As Elder Yu was turning and about to leave, Gu Ruoyun suddenly opened her mouth and stopped him in his tracks.

"Do you have any more orders, young lady?"

He turned back and looked at Gu Ruoyun, smiling as he asked.

"Deliver the herbs that are written on this piece of paper to my room later, I have something to take care of right now and I need to leave for a while."

After handing the piece of paper to Elder Yu, Gu Ruoyun walked out of the courtyard.

Ever since the day that she left the palace, she did not have to chance to say anything to Luo Yin, and now she needed to pay a visit to the Luo household...

In that instance, Luo Yin's smiling face flashed through Gu Ruoyun's mind, and a warm fuzzy feeling trickled through her insides. Perhaps, other than her elder brother, this woman was one of the people that cared most for her.

General Luo's household was solemn and dignified, even the entrance to the household appeared more courtly than that of the Gu's household.

Even though both served as generals of this dynasty, the Gu household gave off a luxurious impression whereas the Luo household gave the impression of intense solemnness.

The people in the household knew Gu Ruoyun and understood her relation with Luo Yin, so they did not stop her when they saw her and just allowed her to enter. However, just as she stepped into the Luo household, she heard voices arguing, causing Gu Ruoyun's brows to crinkle.

"General Luo, even if you do possess the blue sky fruit, it is very much useless to you. You do not have the slightest idea of handling it, there is no way you can use it. However, if you choose to pass the blue sky fruit to us, the Weapon Refining Sect would offer you with countless benefits."

Weapon Refining Sect?

Gu Ruoyun sneered. Could this be considered as bad luck,

bumping into the enemy. She had not expected see people from the Weapon Refining Sect at the Luo household.

Moreover, Gu Ruoyun had not missed out on what the person from the Weapon Refining Sect had said.

Blue sky fruit!

Her breathing turned ragged.

This blue sky fruit was a kind of herb that was found in the swamps. Once it is consumed, the body would be immune to all kinds of poison and toxic, which means that there was no need for fear of poison users!

However, just as the Weapon Refining Sect had mentioned, the blue sky fruit needed to be handled in a unique manner, or else there was a possibility of the body exploding from the colossal power hidden within the fruit.

"Master Hun Fei, I have spent quite a large sum of gold to buy this blue sky fruit from a merchant in the Western Region, and as you said, it is not much of use to me. If you do need it, you can buy it back with gold. I will not ask too much of a price from you. I bought it with ten million gold coins. If you are willing to spend ten million gold coins, I can give it to you.

Ten million gold coins meant nothing to the Weapon Refining Sect.

But who is he? How could anyone even consider taking money from him? You must be dreaming.

Chapter 48: Eternal Glory? Everlasting Infamy? (2)

"General Luo, you should be fully aware of the status of the Weapon Refining Sect," Hun Fei's expression darkened. "We shoulder the burden of protecting the people of this continent, and every decade we face a war with the demons from a different race. If the blue sky fruit is in our hands, it would provide the Weapon Refining Sect with more capability to protect everyone. This is considered a good thing for the people, but you would rather try to benefit from this? How can an inconsiderate and selfish person like you even try to bargain with me? If you do not want to be known as an everlasting sinner, hand over the blue sky fruit to me!"

These words uttered by Hun Fei made it seem as if the Weapon Refining Sect demanded the blue sky fruit for the sake of protecting the people of the continent. Hence, not only could General Luo not reject the claim, he should be grateful for the opportunity to be of help. However, if he chose not to hand over the blue sky fruit, it would be considered as treason, and chose to cause harm to the people!

"Hahaha!"

General Luo howled with laughter, as a mocking smile formed on his face, "So this is how the Weapon Refining Sect behaves? All this talk about virtue and morality, working hard for the people, is nothing but a ploy to accomplish your personal ambitions. At the end of the day, you people of the Weapon Refining Sect are just a bunch of pretentious villains. If the lot of you were really considerate of the common people, why don't you want to fork out the ten million gold coins? Or has the Weapon Refining Sect stooped to such level of poverty."

"Clap clap clap!"

Just as he finished uttering those words, a crisp applause sounded from outside of the hall. When everyone turned their heads and looked in the direction of the applause, under the sunlight, a slim figure slowly sauntered in.

The bright rays of light fell on her body and unexpectedly radiated a sense of unspeakable beauty.

"That is correct," the young woman smiled and said, "The Weapon Refining Sect has stooped to this level of poverty, that they do not even have ten million gold coins. Tsk tsk, if word had gone out about this, I think no one would want to join the Weapon Refining Sect in the future. I finally understand why my elder brother would reject you in front of all the cultivators"

"Gu Ruoyun!"

Hun Fei's face turned sour and unsightly, his clenched fist cracking out loud. He would never ever forget, Gu Xiaosheng and this garbage had rejected the Weapon Refining Sect's invitation not long ago.

Forget about Gu Xiaosheng, he was very talented and was accepted by Ling Zong as an apprentice, but who the heck did she think she was? She was only a piece of useless garbage, and to think that she would actually have this kind of courage.

No, this was not courage, it was stupidity!

"Hmph, I was just thinking about looking for you. Who knew that you would actually deliver yourself over first! " Hun Fei sneered, "You are just in time. You can either follow me to the Weapon Refining Sect later, or you can choose to hand over all your mental energy to the lady of my household."

A mental energy is said to be everything a Martial Warrior has. If the mental energy has depleted, it would not necessarily mean the loss of a life. However it was definitive that there would be no way to continue with the cultivation, it might even render the warrior

retarded.

Therefore, after hearing this, General Luo's face changed, he completely understood what this meant.

"Oh?" Gu Ruoyun cocked her eyebrow and chuckled, "Why do I need to contribute my mental energy to the lady of the Weapon Refining Sect? It seems that there would only be disadvantages for me with no advantage at all, I do not think that I am at that level of stupidity."

"The Weapon Refining Sect might not obtain the blue sky fruit but we will definitely have your mental energy."

In actual reality, Hun Fei was completely agitated by Gu Ruoyun, which caused him to automatically ignore Shi Yun's plan and warning. All that he knew was, this good-for-nothing garbage rejected the Weapon Refining Sect, so he should not make it easy for her!

"Gu Ruoyun, you are more aware of the extent of your body's capability, more than anyone else. You should know that the spiritual ocean within your body is way larger than anyone else, and based on your natural capabilities, there is no way for you to breakthrough to reach the Martial Warrior level, even in a decade. No matter how hard you work and effort you put in, you are still a piece of garbage!" Hun Fei looked at Gu Ruoyun and said mockingly, "Since a piece of garbage like you cannot help others, you do not serve any purpose at all, then why don't you sacrifice for the people of this continent?"

Chapter 49: Eternal Glory? Everlasting Infamy? (3)

"So, what you want is for your lady to absorb my mental energy? Just like how you treated the others in a similar fashion?" Gu Ruoyan grinned as she looked at Hun Fei, mirth filled her clear eyes. "It seems that my observation was on point, that Shi Yun is practicing a sinister skill. No matter it is for staying alive or for elevating her capabilities, it is always through other people's mental energy that it grows."

General Luo's jaw dropped in astonishment, the lady of the Weapon Refining Sect would go as far as to doing something so despicable to expand her capabilities? He had never heard of it, ever!

"Hmph!"

Hun Fei did not care that Gu Ruoyun had everything figured out. He laughed sardonically, "Young lady is the most talented genius of the Weapon Refining Sect, and also the hope of this continent! She is probably the only person in this world to be able to defeat the demons from another race. So, even if it requires the sacrifice of more people, it is for the good of the entire continent, hence those sacrifices are justified, and it was done willingly! Gu Ruoyun, you being alive is just a waste to this continent's resources, it is better to sacrifice for the better good of this continent. Nonetheless, it is not like everyone qualifies to sacrifice for this land. If it had not been for the Weapon Refining Sect, you would not have the opportunity to leave behind a great legacy."

In other words, you should be grateful to me for giving you this opportunity to sacrifice yourself for the sake of this land, or else you would not have this golden chance.

"If that is the case, if anyone were to kill you in the future, you should be thankful to him, thankful that he had gotten rid of a

vermin from this land. Otherwise, it would still be unknown just how many innocent lives have died unjustly on the hands of the Weapon Refining Sect. Oh wait, maybe by that time, everyone of this continent would be thanking him."

"Boom!"

There was a violent rage that exploded from Hun Fei's body, his cold eyes trained on Gu Ruoyun as he said word by word: "Gu Ruoyun, you have crossed the line! For a garbage such as yourself, if your mental energy could heal our lady's body and even help her to breakthrough to a higher level, you would be considered to have done a noble sacrifice for this land, and yet you do not appreciate this opportunity and even dare to spout such nonsense! You insist on being this person with an everlasting infamy! If you are so adamant and stubborn, then you will be condemned by the public. By the time that this land is in ruins, you will be the key person to take the blame! In that very moment, everyone will see you as the enemy, and your relatives and future generation would be dishonoured by you! Is that what you want?"

"Haha!" Gu Ruoyun burst out laughing, then a jeering smile formed from the corners of her lips, "So according to you, there is nothing wrong with people sacrificing for the power of the Weapon Refining Sect? Those who do not wish to sacrifice are to be known as eternal sinners?"

"Of course!" Hun Fei lifted his head proudly. He jeered, "The duty of the Weapon Refining Sect is to battle the demons from another race. It is for the peace and stability of the land, and as long as we stand strong, this land can continue to live on, and your sacrifices will not be in vain."

Honestly, having lived two lives, this was Gu Ruoyun's second time in encountering such a shameless person. Of course, the first one would be her former father from the Xia household. The shamelessness that these two people portray make a good match. It was a pity that the both of them could not be siblings.

"Then..." Gu Ruoyun paused, smiling as she opened her mouth to utter, "Who am I to sacrifice for the people of this land? Do I owe them anything? I never knew what it meant to find happiness in helping others. I only believe in doing things that are beneficial to me. So what if everyone under the bright blue sky was dead? It is enough to me as long as the people I care for are still alive."

Hun Fei's face turned livid with anger.

He had thought that this task could be easily taken care of. After all, there were not many chances like this to leave behind a good legacy for an eternity, and she should have accepted this offer right off the bat. Why in the world would anyone not want to sacrifice for the sake of this land? Not only was this woman a good-for-nothing piece of garbage, she was also an idiot!

Chapter 50: The Gu Family Visits Again (1)

He had thought that this task could be easily taken care of. After all, there were not many chances like this to leave behind a good legacy for an eternity, and she should have accepted this offer right off the bat. Why in the world would anyone not want to sacrifice for the sake of this land? Not only was this woman a good-for-nothing piece of garbage, she was also an idiot!

"I had initially thought that everyone in this world was just like the Weapon Refining Sect, not tremble in the face of death. However, I had not expected that there were so many selfish and cowardly people. Forget it then, since you are all this weak. I will not force you all! Hopefully, all of you will not regret this in the future!"

Hun Fei glanced at Gu Ruoyun's delicate face from the side, that look of disdain that flashed across his face was as if she was the biggest embarrassment of this continent.

This time, even without waiting for Gu Ruoyun's reply, General Luo's stormed in an insulting voice, "This is truly an eye-opening experience for me today. The much-dignified Weapon Refining Sect are all for their own selfish agendas, and actually wants a young girl to sacrifice her life for you all! How dare you speak of it with such righteousness! Can you be any more outrageous and shameless?"

Even if the Weapon Refining Sect had skin thicker than the city walls, no one ever had the guts to say this straight into the face of the people of the Weapon Refining Sect. Hence, when he heard General Luo's reply, Hun Fei's face immediately turned ashen.

"Luo Hongtian, we will meet again!"

With that said, Hun Fei huffed and stormed off with a wave of his cuff.

"These people from the Weapon Refining Sect are going overboard with all this nonsense," Luo Hongtian observed Hun Fei's silhouette and frowned, "Nonetheless, now that we have crossed the Weapon Refining Sect, there is bound to be trouble ahead. Luckily there are still the three main sanctions to stifle them, and he will not dare to cause trouble to my household in the open."

Without realizing it, there was cold sweat all over Luo Hongtian's back. It was evident that Hun Fei had given him a considerable amount of pressure.

"Little girl Gu, I am afraid that you will face some problems in the future," Luo Hongtian turned and looked at Gu Ruoyun with a solemn expression, and said, "Do not appear at places with fewer people in the future, or else the Weapon Refining Sect will definitely take this opportunity to assassinate you. If you were at a more crowded space, they would not dare to make a move."

Gu Ruoyun lifted her eyebrows slightly and smiled as she said, "Do not worry, I am aware of this. Oh yes, the reason I came here is to have General Luo to help me out with something."

"Oh? What is it?" Luo Hongtian looked at Gu Ruoyun in surprise. He had thought that this young maiden was here for Yin Er, but judging from the current situation, it seemed as though she was looking for him...

Gu Ruoyun's eyes shone, and with a suppressed smile she requested, "I need weapons! Hundreds of them. I need these weapons to be forged within a short period of time, and only General Luo you can pull this off!"

It was publicly known that General Luo owned a smiting workshop that specialized in forging weapons to cater to the imperial army. This was also the main reason for Gu Ruoyun's visit today...

Luo Hongtian's eyes darkened slightly, "What do you need it

for?"

Even if he really liked this young girl, why would she need a large amount of weapons forged? As the general who takes pride in protecting his country, he would absolutely not allow for anyone to harm the Azure Dragon Country.

"Just relax, I am not interested in the Azure Dragon Country," Gu Ruoyun obviously knew what Luo Hongtian was thinking deep in his heart. She chuckled softly, "Besides, I am the fairer sex, what use can the throne be of to me? More importantly, for me, the power of the throne does not captivate me at all. I need the kind of power that is above the imperial power, the kind of power that is comparable to that of the three main sanctions!"

In that very moment, a domineering air radiated strongly from the young lady's body. Luo Hongtian's eyes blurred. It was as though he was seeing the same commanding legendary man from over a decade ago...

Chapter 51: The Gu Family Visits Again (2)

At that moment, Luo Hongtian was still unaware that in a few years later, a monstrous team would appear among all of the mainlands. Though there would not be many members in the team, each of them would possess such intrepid amount of energy that could make the whole mainland tremble in fear, to the point that even the three main rulings would have to look up to them...

Furthermore, that power would be known by the commoners as the Devil Sect! A sect that would exist as though it was frequented by demons and ghosts and was colored by the crimson of fresh blood.

As for the main ruler of the Devil Sect, who would have ever thought that it would be the young little loser girl, Gu Ruoyun, who everyone had previously looked down on?

Of course, this would not take place until many years later...

"Hahaha!" Luo Hongtian laughed out loudly, "Little girl, that is quite some determination you have right there. I will believe in the things that you just said. As long as you don't do anything that would harm the Emperor, I will definitely forge weaponry for you."

Having listened to this, Gu Ruoyun let out a laugh as well, her bright eyes gleaming sparkingly.

"Thank you very much then, General Luo. I promise you today that as long as the Emperor of Azure Dragon Country does not do anything that harms neither me nor people that I care about, not only will I not hurt him, I will also help to protect and guard him on behalf of you, General Luo. However, if the Emperor does something bad that is beyond irreparable, then I would be sorry to say that it would be time for the Azure Dragon Country to change its dynasty. I'm sure that you understand my temper well. I will not swallow insults and humiliations silently. Therefore, I wish

that from now on, the Emperor of the Azure Dragon Country will never again do something that will go against me."

If it was another person who spoke these words, General Luo would most likely not take this seriously and would even let out a crack of laughter.

Then again, who was she?

The daughter of Gu Tian and the sister of Gu ShengXiao! Especially after having seen her conduct recently, Luo Hongtian understood clearly that overturning the whole empire would just be a matter of time for her...

"Alright, I will give you my word as well. If the Emperor does something that harms you, I promise I will not safeguard him and I'll even support your actions instead!"

"Thanks a lot!"

Gu Ruoyun bumped fists with General Luo. She understood the meaning of this pact real well. It also showed and proved the position where General Luo stood in this matter.

Turning her head to look Luo Yin who was standing right next to her, she said, "Luo Yin, I'm staying at Hundred Herb Hall now. If you need anything, just find me there. I have already told Shopkeeper Zhao that you can come in anytime to see me."

Then, not saying another extra word, Gu Ruoyun just smiled and left.

Looking at the silhouette of Gu Ruoyin leaving, Luo Yin was in a slight daze. Was this the young little girl who used to hide behind his back every time there was danger? Since when had she become so strong and powerful?

"'A golden carp does not solely belong in a pool. When there is a storm, it evolves to become a dragon too.' This young girl is destined to become somebody extraordinary. I have a feeling that her achievements will not be any fewer than Gu Tian. Giving up

this granddaughter of his is the biggest mistake of his life. Yin'er, just you watch, it will not take long for her to finally reach her full potential. When that time comes, it will definitely astonish the whole world. Let us just wait and see!"

Even the old man from the Ling family could see that there was something unusual about Gu Ruoyun. Otherwise, he would not be supporting her secretly. It was only her own family of flesh and blood who had always been treating her as garbage. Such a joke, wasn't it?

Luo Hongtian laughed out loud suddenly. He really couldn't wait to see the look on that geezer's face now...

He was sure it would be really amusing!

...

As Gu Ruoyun got back to the Hundred Herb Hall, she saw that the main entrance was completely blocked by a huge crowd of people. In that crowd, there were a few figures that were familiar to her. She could not help but knit her brows together.

However, compared to the last time, there was one extra fat figure there as well...

Chapter 52: The Gu Family Visits Again (3)

"Gu Ruoyun, you really are here after all!"

When the Second Madam caught a glimpse of Gu Ruoyun coming for not far away, her face instantaneously darkened a few shades. It was so obvious that she saw the arrival of her uncle and aunt and yet, how dare this abhorrent girl not come to greet them immediately? Who the hell taught her such ill manners?

"Hurmph! How dare you? How rude of you to refuse to see your own aunt and uncle! Don't you have even the slightest sense of manners? Not only that, you actually let the people of Hundred Herb Hall throw your uncle out of the door? It is such a disgrace to our Gu family to even have such an ungrateful daughter in the house!"

With the corner of her mouth lifted up slightly in a scornful manner, she folded her arms across her chest. Her gaze scanned through each of them from the corner of her eyes.

"I am no longer the member of the Gu family, so please, you guys are no longer my uncle or my aunt anymore. I only have one relative now, and that is Gu Shengxiao. Any other person is nothing but a mere stranger who is totally unrelated to me now."

The look on the Second Madam's face became gloomy with dismal. Just the thought of how Second Master Gu got thrown out under the watchful eyes of the crowd was extremely embarrassing and unbearable. They were obviously digging their own graves now, all thanks to this bloody bitch!

"Hurmph! If I'd known this beforehand, I should have strangled you alive the moment your dad passed away before you could make any mischief. Isn't it sufficient to deface my daughter alone? And now you are trying to hurt my husband instead? Why don't you just go to hell?! You might as well just go ahead and die and save all of us from your nuisance."

If it wasn't for her, Panpan would not have been beaten by her own dad. Since she was little, her daughter was fully doted on and nobody had dared to lay a finger on her before. It was because of this that the Second Madam loathed Gu Ruoyun to her guts.

If it was possible, she really would love to give this little bitch a good slap across the face.

"Shut your mouth up!"

Second Master Gu shouted out suddenly in a very loud voice, "I have told you to stay at home but you wouldn't listen, remember?! What do you think would happen if your words somehow made its way to the Young Master Dongfang? Do you really want the whole Gu family to be annihilated?"

Still feeling resentful, Second Madam scoffed, "I really don't understand how that shameless bitch, Liu Yu, could become the adopted sister of the Young Master Dongfang. God must have been really blind then! On top of that, we have to help to find this useless piece of crap right now. Bringing back this crap to the Dongfang family would just waste their food resources. I doubt that the almighty Dongfang family would actually accept her anyway."

Liu Yu, with her real name being Dongfang Yu, had changed her name in order to cut ties and break away with the Dongfang family. Nevertheless, as she was an adopted sister of the Young Master Dongfang, the Second Madam did not really think highly of her. It was not like she was the real daughter of the Dongfang family anyway. Without the help of the Dongfang family, what could Dongfang Shaoze really do with just the sole power of his? Surely, he would not dare to create a disturbance in the Imperial City?

All the same, Second Madam had forgotten that as an offspring of the aristocratic Dongfang family, how was it possible for Dongfang Shaoze's strength to be nothing more than ordinary? She was

merely blinded by jealousy.

In actual fact, before getting married to Second Master Gu, the Second Madam was actually infatuated with Gu Tian. Who would not fall in love with that godly handsome, charming and brilliant man? Be that as it may, Gu Tian had never been interested in pursuing any love affair. He was still single in his age of late twenties.

In order to get closer to the person that she loved, Second Madam had decided to get married to the Second Master Gu. At first, she thought that this fine specimen of a man would never have a parallel match, but how wrong she turned out to be. That day, when Gu Tian brought that woman back to the Gu family, she was startled with bewilderment.

Who would have ever thought that there would be such a beautiful and elegant woman in this world? When the two of them were together, they really looked like a perfect couple.

Generally speaking, looking at such a perfect couple, people would usually give their blessing but it was not at all in the case of the Second Madam. In her opinion, she had this mindset that Gu Tian should not be married or even fall in love with any other woman at all in his entire life. Her jealousy had given birth to hatred and prompted her to allow Second Master Gu to make that pact with that man, for the sake of eliminating these two people...

Chapter 53: No Such Thing As The Most Impudent, Only More Brazen (1)

Smack!

A slap was thrown across the face of the Second Madam by Second Master Gu. With his face livid with rage, he bellowed, "I have already told you not to come in the first place! All you do is only make the matter worse! Don't you dare to speak another word again, otherwise I will divorce you!"

Without sparing another glance towards her, he turned his gaze to Gu Ruoyun instead. This time, his tone softened, "Yun'er, I have come to welcome you back home now. Your grandfather is worried sick about your safety with you being all alone outside. I am concerned about you as well. With that mere power of yours, how do you expect to survive in this world? As long as you agree to come back home with me, the Gu family will certainly treasure you dearly. Your treatment will be no worse than Panpan's."

At that moment, the gaze of the Second Madam was raging with flame. It was as if it was going to burn and tear Gu Ruoyun up into thousands of pieces.

Nevertheless, having been warned by Second Master Gu just a moment ago, she didn't dare to attempt to speak a word.

"Welcome me home?" Gu Ruoyun glanced at Second Master Gu. "With such a parade? Why don't I feel like this is a welcome but more like an attempt to capture me instead? Besides, since the Gu family has decided to pass me to the Weapon Refining Sect and let my life and death be determined by fate instead, I am no longer part of your Gu Family! I could never ever cross such a huge threshold anyway. So, please leave."

The face of Second Master Gu flushed and turned pale as he listened to her. "Yun'er, I'm still your uncle no matter what. Don't

make things difficult for us. If we were not able to bring you back, Young Master Dongfang would never ever let us off easily. Please help me with this favor, will you?"

In actual truth, the Gu family could save all these troubles by just telling Dongfang Shaoze the whereabouts of Gu Ruoyun. However, the Gu family was always more avaricious and what would they get in return by just giving him her address? What they really wanted was to let Gu Ruoyun build a good relationship with Dongfang Shaoze so that they could benefit from this as well.

It was just too bad that things would rarely go as they wished...

"What if I refused to go back?" Gu Ruoyun replied the middle-aged man in front of her with a smile, "How do you guys plan to deal with me then?"

"You little brat! How dare you?!" Not able to hold it in anymore, Second Madam shouted out loudly, "You ungrateful little bitch! We, the Gu family, raised you up till what you have become now and this is how you repay us? Such a malicious person you are! You really sure are the daughter of that doxy whore! You are just as much of a wench as she is!"

Even though Gu Ruoyun had never ever met her mother before, in her past life, her mother, who also was the guardian of her entire life, had always had a soft spot in her heart.

Therefore, having listened to the words of the Second Madam, her smile gradually turned cold and chilly. "You just made a fatal mistake. A mistake that is beyond repair."

Taken aback, Second Madam looked at Gu Ruoyun, dumbfounded.

She had never seen her in such a state before...

Under the caress of the light breeze, the young lady raised her delicate and pretty face gradually. Her body seemed as if it was covered with a layer of chilly air, invoking the hearts of those

nearby to tremble ever so slightly. It was for unknown reasons that the young lady in front actually possessed a sense of presence that would make people look up to her with respect.

As though she was the ruler of the universe! With her supremacy exuding out overwhelmingly!

"Is this...the useless Lady Gu that we know of? Seems like the rumor is true after all! Gu Ruoyun is the most concealed person in the Imperial City..." Second Madam thought to herself.

"Go back and tell that Admiral of the Gu family that I, Gu Ruoyun, will never ever return to care for the Gu family! There is no need for you to waste your energy here anymore!"

As she was saying this, she threw a glance towards the Second Madam. From this glance, Second Master Gu instantaneously understood that it was the words of Second Madam that had provoked her, prompting her to refuse to return to the Gu family. At that exact moment, he burst with rage and glared at Second Madam ferociously.

Chapter 54: No Such Thing As The Most Imprudent, Only More Brazen (2)

"Yun'er, you..."

Just when Second Master Gu was about to say something, a thunderous shout could be heard from some distance away, "Who the hell allowed all of you to disturb my people in the Hundred Herb Hall? Where is Manager Zhao? You better come out now!"

Elder Yu was just on his way to inspect the Hundred Herb Hall when he unexpectedly came across the scene of Gu Ruoyun being blocked by the Gu family. Instantly, his anger began to boil with rage.

Having heard him, one of the workers who stood near him answered while cowering, "Reporting to Elder Yu, Manager Zhao has gone out to see a patient."

"Gone out to see a patient? Hurmph! How could he go out now at this time to see a patient?! Now that Gu Ruoyun is already a member of the Hundred Herb Hall, I will not allow anybody to come and disturb her peace! Somebody go strip the clothes off these sons of a bitch and throw them out now! Next time, just throw them out if they ever come again! Let them come as many times as they like if they are not afraid of making a fool out of themselves!"

Gu Ruoyun did not really want to cause a scene right now. After all, she wanted to fend off the Gu family. This was precisely why she still would not let Elder Yu reveal the fact that she was already the master of the Hundred Herb Hall. Otherwise, with the amount of greed that the Gu family possessed, it would not be a stretch to think that she would have a hard time shaking them off.

"Yes, master."

The group of guards who were following closely behind Elder Yu

rushed forward instantly. Without even giving the Gu family the slightest chance to resist, the group of guards ripped their clothes off completely and then threw them out to the crowds. It was still acceptable if the Second Master Gu was the only one who received this treatment. However, the Second Madam was treated the same way as well and she felt so ashamed that she wanted to die on the spot. Her hatred and resentment for Gu Ruoyun multiplied instantly.

"You little bitch! Just you wait! I will make you pay for this when I come back again next time! No, wait, it's not just that! I'm going to make you go through all sorts of torture and suffering as well!"

Perhaps it was because she could feel the hatred that was deeply enrooted in the glare of the Second Madam, it made Gu Ruoyun looked directly into her eyes. Her pair of bright, clear eyes showed no fear nor any signs of flinching. All there was to it was only a faint little smile that was playing on the corner of her lips.

Presently, everybody that was around was whispering and chattering about the naked Gu family. Even the thick-faced Second Master Gu could not bear to lift his head up high. This time, the Gu family had really made a fool out of themselves.

Without as much as a glance towards them, Gu Ruoyun turned away and walked into the Hundred Herb Hall. Elder Yu who was following very closely behind, conducted himself with restraint.

"Tell me, what actually happened?"

Striding forward, Gu Ruoyun took a seat and smiled at Elder Yu.

It was obvious that all of these had something to do with Dongfang Shaoze.

"This..." Elder Yu said awkwardly, "Well actually, the young master just wanted to avenge you. The Gu family always go too far in bullying other people which was why young master decided to give them an impossible task in order to torment them. We never

thought that they would run into you at the entrance, Lady Gu. This is all Manager Zhao's fault! Young master had specifically instructed him to not let the Gu family meet you at all but he just happened to be out at this moment. When he comes back later, I will see that he gets his punishment."

"There is no need for punishment." Lifting up a cup of tea that was by the side of the chair, Gu Ruoyun took a small sip before putting it down again and said, "It's just that from now on, please do inform me if you are going to do anything. At the very least, I could be prepared for it."

Elder Yu gave out a burst of laughter before becoming serious once more. "That's right, Lady Gu. I have found the people that you have asked for. All of these people are orphans. Be that as it may, they all have some potential. Even though they might not become some peerless geniuses after undergoing training and cultivation, but they would definitely turn out to be quite decent."

"Oh?" Raising a brow, Gu Ruoyun asked, "Where are they right now? Bring me to them."

"Yes, Lady Gu. Follow me please."

As he finished that sentence, he stood up to lead the way with Gu Ruoyun trailing closely behind him. Together, they walked out of the Hundred Herb Hall.

Chapter 55: The Rise of The Almighty Army

(1)

There was a courtyard that was situated right at the outskirts of the Imperial City, sitting in the midst of the dense forest which completely covered the sky and the sun, but at this moment, it was slowly revealing itself in front of Gu Ruoyun's eyes under the lead of Elder Yu.

"I have never thought that such a place would exist in the Hundred Herb Hall." Gu Ruoyun smiled faintly, "This place seems to be quite suitable for me to grow and mature in secret. Until my feathers are fully grown, I do not want anybody to know about my power at the moment."

Letting out a slight smile, Elder Yu turned and looked at Gu Ruoyun. "This is the place where the young master used to have his training. The exterior is surrounded by the Five-Element Eight Trigram Formation. Unless there is a guide who leads the way, nobody else could ever come to this place. When the young master heard that you would like to train and cultivate your power, he asked me to show you this place, Lady Gu."

Dongfang Shaoze?

Stunned in astonishment, Gu Ruoyun knitted her willow-shaped eyebrows together and asked, "Actually, what is the relationship between your young master and my parents? Why does he keep helping me interminably?"

"I am afraid I cannot tell you now, please forgive me. When the right moment comes for you to know the truth, the young master will surely explain everything to you without a doubt. It is just that, sometimes, knowing too much would bring more harm than good. The young master merely wishes for your wellness from the bottom of his heart."

These days, the current Dongfang family was no longer the same as they used to be. Even the young master himself was in deep distress and extreme misery right now. In such moment, how could the young master have the heart to drag her down along with him too?

Especially now that her strength was still not powerful enough...

Seeing as how Elder Yu refused to say another word, Gu Ruoyun stopped her queries. She calmly collected her thoughts and finally said, "Let's go, bring me to those people whom you have handpicked for me."

...

Inside the courtyard, the moment Gu Ruoyun entered the entrance, she could feel innumerable gazes with sharp vigilance directed towards her. Without uttering a single word, she unhurriedly took in the sight of all the people in the courtyard.

Without a doubt, all of these people who were handpicked by Elder Yu possessed great bodies with high potential, which definitely made them geniuses in cultivating. However, they all seem to have experienced some sort of hardship and trauma that showed in their eyes. Their eyes were not as bright and innocent as other commoners, but instead, they carried a sense merciless and ferocious kind of aura in them.

And this was exactly what she was looking for.

"Perhaps from the very start, Elder Yu has told all of you about the purpose of you being here but I am sure that it has never crossed your mind that the person who requested for all of you was a young little girl like me." Gu Ruoyun let out a faint slight smile, a smile so bright that it was not to be ignored. "Perhaps none of you would be willing to submit, thinking that such a young little girl like me should not be giving orders to any of you. But let me tell you just one thing, if you really want to change your destiny and turn the tables around on the ruffians who have been bullying you,

as well as obtaining the highest absolute power in this world, then you will have to listen and obey to every command of mine!"

Undoubtedly, Gu Ruoyun had noticed the unwillingness from the eyes of this group of people from the very start.

Even though they have sunken to the current state that they were in due to certain matters that they did, it did not mean that they would be willing to submit and obey to a mere little girl who was not even in her twenties yet.

"Hurmph! Since you have such big words, why don't you show us your power and impress us instead?"

At this moment, a taunting sneer could be heard loudly.

Following the source of the voice, Gu Ruoyun's gaze rested upon a shabbily dressed young man in green. Faintly letting out a smile, she asked, "What's your name?"

"Xun Feng."

With his head high up in the air in an arrogant manner, he replied coldly.

"Not bad." Gu Ruoyun glanced at Xun Feng and nodded her head slightly, "You have your arrogance and your temper seems to be quite splendid too. Over here, I will not suppress your attitude. None of you would have to worry or restrain yourself too much. As for my power that you asked of, I will show you my real strength if you manage to pass my test. How about that? I wonder whether you have the guts to try it then?"

Chapter 56: The Rise of The Almighty Army

(2)

After all, there were certain things that she could only show at ease when they had become her followers through and through.

"Sure!" Xun Feng let out a scoff and said, "My life was rescued by Elder Yu, what is wrong if it is just one tryout? I hope you will not disappoint me then!"

Having heard his words, Gu Ruoyun merely let out a smile, "There are over a hundred of you right here, I will not take in all of you guys. Later, I will let all of you battle it out at Spiritual Beast Mountains. No spiritual energy is allowed during the battle, only hand-to-hand combat is permissible. During the course, you can choose to flee or escape. However, once you have escaped, I will no longer use you. Those who finally stay behind and survive will become the ultimate peerless powerful person in this world. The time duration is one month. Do you have any objections?"

Lightly lifting up her head, the delicate features of this young girl was filled with a soft and mild shine.

Dazed in a trance, all of the men no longer looked at the adolescent in front of them as a mere little girl of just fourteen or fifteen of age. It was as if she was a domineer over all the others, with her supremacy aura exuding relentlessly.

"Well, since it is just a mere one month, I am going for it."

Xun Feng swept his eyes over Gu Ruoyun. Frankly, he was willing to pledge his loyalty and allegiance to someone much senior compared to him, but then again, this was just a mere little girl who was barely twenty.

"Alright, such being the case, let's go then, Elder Yu."

Sweeping her eyes over all of the people that were behind her, she let out a faint smile and said, "I will come back to see the

results in one month. I hope you guys will not disappoint me."

...

"What did you just say?"

In the Gu household, General Gu pounded the table hard and jumped to his feet, his face turned livid with rage. "Gu Ruoyun refused to come back home with you?"

"It is all this tramp's fault!" Second Master Gu glared fiercely at the Second Madam as he spoke, "If it was not for the things that she had said, my niece would not have acted so merciless towards us. I could see that she still harbors some feelings towards the Gu family and still has the inclination of coming back home. However, it was all because of this whore who hurled insults at my niece's parents right in front of her face! Which daughter could stand and pocket that kind of insult?"

Bam!

The table was pounded by General Gu so hard that it split into two halves. Gnashing his teeth in anger, he lashed out, "Who was the one who asked you to take in such a foolish woman as a wife? How could you even make that kind of mistake? If we were not able to hand Gu Ruoyun up, the Dongfang young master will never let the matter go just like that. I want you to annul your marriage with this foolish woman right now!"

"Yes, father!"

Listening to the exchange of words between the father and the son, the Second Madam fell and toppled to the ground and started to yell out loud in a frenzied manner all of a sudden.

"No! You cannot treat me this way! You cannot annul our marriage! Ling Xi will definitely come to hate all of you when he comes back!"

At this moment, she knew that Ling Xi was her only hope, the only leverage that she could use to secure her position in the Gu

family...

Sure enough, General Gu became tongue-tied when he heard of this. After a long moment of silence, he finally went on speaking, "Alright, for the sake of Ling Xi, I will let you remain at Gu Family for the time being. However! You are no longer permitted to step outside of the Gu family's compound anymore. Not even half a step! If you do, you will be punished and disciplined! Do you understand?"

The Second Madam dropped down and slumped sluggishly, sweat was dripping down from her forehead. Right now, she looked entirely wretched in a sorry state.

The hatred in her heart had now reached a profound stage. What would not she have done to shred and rip Gu Ruoyun into thousands of pieces right now!

It was all because of her! It was all her fault that I am now being reduced to the outcast wife.

As expected, she and her wanton mother were exactly the same and not of any good at all! No, wait! She was even worse than her wanton mother! How dare she become so treacherous and traitorous, with not even the slightest sense of respect for the Gu family. Even her own mother would not dare to be so defiant and supercilious.

"Gu Ruoyun, I should have strangled you little malicious girl to death when I had the chance to so that you would have had no chance to cause any damage at all in the first place. But do not worry, just you wait and see! It will be your death sentence when my son comes back, you little whore!"

Chapter 57: The Rise of The Almighty Army

(3)

Looking at the ferocious features of the Second Madam, Second Master Gu could not help but knit his brows together. Still frowning, he turned towards General Gu and asked, "Father, so what should we do next?"

Narrowing both of his eyes slightly, General Gu scoffed with a cold sneer and said, "It seems like I would have to attend to this matter by myself this time! At any rate, I am still her grandfather. I do not believe that she dare refuse a meeting with me if I seek her personally! If she really had the guts to do that, I am sure she would become famous for being unfilial overnight!"

Filial piety was a central value of the Azure Dragon Country. He knew well that by making an entrance himself, she could not refuse no matter what. Otherwise, she would invite a lot of resent and dislike from others.

However, it was such a pity that this time, General Gu was asked to leave when he reached there even before he could see Gu Ruoyun even once.

There was no other reason other than the fact that Gu Ruoyun was in the midst of her cultivation training ever since she got back. Let alone other people, even Dongfang Shaoze was not able to see her at all. That was why there was nothing that General Gu could do other than go back home in disappointment.

As a result of not being able to meet Guo Ruoyun for a few days continuously, General Gu began to worry whether Dongfang Shaoze would come pay a visit to the Gu family. Just when he was feeling uneasy with anxiousness, he suddenly received news from the spy that he had placed earlier on at the Imperial Gate that Dongfang young master had left the Azure Dragon country in a rather urgent manner.

Then only could he finally set his heart at ease for now...

Inside the bedroom, Gu Ruoyun slowly opened her eyes. A matchless beautiful face appeared in front of her in a flash.

"Xiao Yue?" When and where had this fellow appeared from? She did not even notice a thing.

The man pouted his lips in an aggrieved manner and his gaze was full of accusation as he stared straight at Gu Ruoyun. "Xiao Yun, you have been cultivating for too long."

In other words, he had not seen Gu Yuoyun for a long time now.

"Was it very long?" Gu Ruoyun chuckled. "It seems like I have been doing closed-door cultivation for almost a month now, isn't it? Now I have already made a breakthrough and have reached level six in the Qi Collection ranks, I wonder how is the progress of Admiral Luo right now with my weapon forgery."

Wah!

All of a sudden, there was a wave of tremor that could be felt deep inside Gu Ruoyun's soul. Delighted, she asked, "Zixie, are you awake now?"

Just when she finished talking, a ray of purple light shone out from Gu Ruoyun's body. Soon after, a deep manly sexy voice could be heard laughing out loud. "Hey there, little girl, it has been quite some time. Why? You missed me, didn't you? So impatient to summon me out in a hurry?"

Clothed in a long purple robe, with the sleeve embroidered with the drawing of a purple phoenix, a man with very handsome features coupled with a devilish smile appeared. His every little move exuded a sense of an awe-inspiring presence.

Gu Ruoyun's face darkened suddenly. "I have a favor to ask of you."

As she finished talking, she looked at Qianbei Ye who was right

next to her and said, "This is my new friend. Could you help me to take a look at his memory, please? What made him lose all of his memories?"

"Oh?" Lifting his brows in a devilish fashion, Zixie's gaze followed to where Gu Ruoyun was looking at.

The moment he took in the sight of Qianbei Ye, that handsome face froze up all of a sudden. With a "swoosh" sound, his aura of presence instantaneously reached its maximum height, his gaze turned as cold as frost. "Why are you here?"

Cold....

This instant, Gu Ruoyun noticed the coldness in Zixie's eyes, such extent that she had never seen before.

Since the day that she had got to know Zixie, she had never seen this kind of expression on his face before, especially the flame of hatred that was burning with rage right now in that pair of purple eyes.

"Zixie, what is going on right now?"

"What is going on?" Zixie let out a sardonic sneer. "You should ask him instead!"

Chapter 58: The Rise of The Almighty Army

(4)

"Xiao Ye?"

Looking over at Qianbei Ye, Gu Ruoyun noticed that his brows were knitted together, deep in thought. After a long moment of silence, he shook his head and said, "I do not remember anything. I do not have any memory at all about whatever that has happened in the past."

"Do not remember? Haha! Did you really think that with just this one sentence you could actually forget all of the grave mistakes that you have committed in the past and forget the deaths of all of those people that were caused by you? Qianbei Ye, I thought that you had vanished in the long-running history. Never had I ever thought that you would reappear again in this place. Your power is mighty and powerful, I refuse to believe that there could be a person alive who could actually seal your memories. No other person is capable enough to do that other than yourself!"

No other person who could seal your memories other than yourself?

Shock and dismay flashed instantly in Gu Ruoyun's eyes. What did Zixie mean by this? Did this mean that the person who sealed Qianbei Ye's memory was no other than himself?

Why would he want to do that?

Qianbei Ye turned silent immediately, his brows furrowed in slight pain. Pieces of memories flashed past in front of his eyes and disappeared again in a flash.

In that memory, there was a young girl fully clad in white, her legs standing on the divine dragon high on top of the clouds. However, no matter how hard he tried to recollect it, he still was not able to clearly see the face of that girl. Still, just that light

silhouette of hers somehow managed to trigger an intense pain in his heart.

It was an agonizing pain that he had never ever felt before, as though his heart was pierced with thousands and thousands of arrows.

"Xiao Ye?"

Looking into the ghastly pale face of Qianbei Ye that portrayed an immense amount of pain, Gu Ruoyun stopped him from recalling the memory right away. "It does not matter if you could not recall any memory."

"No!" Qianbei Ye lifted his head up to look at Gu Ruoyun. "Xiao Yun, I want to know what kind of person I really was back in the past. I know you can help me out in this. Even if I really had done some grave mistakes that are unforgivable, I would still have to bear and undertake the responsibilities now. Sealing my own memories is nothing more than a cowardice action!"

Gu Ruoyun let out a smile and said, "Alright, I will help you out. Zixie, do you have any idea how?"

Zixie turned his head away from Gu Ruoyun. Asking me to help out this bastard? No way!

"Zixie!"

This was the first time Gu Ruoyun found Zixie to be hard to deal with and she could not help but rubbed her forehead dejectedly. "I really have no clue what sort of conflict that has happened between the two of you but since you hate him so much, don't you think letting him remember his past mistakes will be better? It would be some sort of punishments as well for him."

Having listened to her words, Zixie became quiet at once.

"Young girl, you have a point. Qianbei Ye, I know that I am unable to kill you right now but I will not let you off easily either. I will make you remember all of the things that you have done in the

past and let you live in remorse and self-resentment. All because it was entirely your mistake that has caused the death of that person! Did you really think that sealing up your memories could let you avoid all these consequences? I will never let you live in peace!"

It was hard to believe that this man, who was always standing high up on the altar, with a sense of superiority that looked down upon all living creatures, could actually descend and fall into the demonic path. Even though his features and the mystique aura around him had changed, the soul deep in his heart still remained the same...

Letting out a scoff, Zixie turned towards Gu Ruoyun and said, "However, young girl, I have a warning for you. This fellow is not a good person. Do not believe in him too much. Though he used to be a deity, he is now nothing more than a demon!"

The moment he had finished his words, without sparing another second, he vanished in a flash in front of these two people...

A deafening silence could suddenly be felt in the room.

After a long while, a cautious and manly voice could finally be heard.

"Xiao Yun, will you not trust me?"

Astounded and in astonishment, Gu Ruoyun looked up and had her gaze met with a pair of wary eyes. Right now, in his eyes, there was a sense of nervousness and fear, along with the indescribable look of longing as well...

Chapter 59: The Rise of The Almighty Army

(5)

"No, I won't." Shaking her head, she chuckled softly. "I believe in Zixie, but I believe in my feelings and guts more. No matter what kind of person you were in the past, the person that I know of is not of the old you but who you are right now."

The man burst into a laugh.

The laughter was so breathlessly beautiful and captivating, to the extent that even the universe appeared dull in comparison.

"I believe in you too. In this world, you are the only person I believe in. Even if you had discarded me, I would still believe that you must have your own reasons for doing that. Xiao Yun, if there came a day that you give up on me, I would be waiting for you right here, waiting for you to come back and find me eventually...."

Gu Ruoyun felt a clench in her heart. She felt pity and ache towards this man. No matter how big of a mistake that he had committed in the past, she would never ever give up on him....

Walking out the door, she immediately saw Elder Yu rushing towards her. The moment he saw Gu Ruoyun and Qianbei Ye who was about to come out from the room, he rushed forward delightedly.

"Lady Gu, the group of people just came back."

Faintly lifting her brows, Gu Ruoyun smiled. "Now that I think about it, it's about time for Admiral Luo's weapons to arrive as well. Elder Yu, could you please get those weapons for me? It is time for me to reveal my plan."

"Yes, Lady Gu."

...

Just a month ago, there was about a hundred over people in the group that was sent to the Spiritual Beat Mountains by Gu Ruoyun, but right now, only slightly over fifty people had returned. Most of the people had escaped when they could not withstand the dangers that they came across. Some even met with their deaths under the claws of ferocious wild beasts.

Nevertheless, right now, these people had no idea that because of their perseverance and determination, they would become the almighty powerhouses that could make all of the mainlands tremble in fear in the near future!

In the courtyard, Gu Ruoyun swept her glance over every person who had managed to stay behind and finally came to a rest on Xun Feng who was sporting his usual haughty and arrogant look.

"You managed to hold up, I see."

"That is right." Lifting up his face, he said in a cold and arrogant manner, "Do you remember that you gave us your words you would show your true potential if we managed to survive? I hope you will not let our efforts in this one month go to waste."

Gu Ruoyun burst out laughing. "Well, to be honest, I don't have many abilities. Up till now, I am merely at level six in the Qi Collection ranks. When it comes to combat strength, I am not a match at all for all you elites."

Xun Feng's face turned dark immediately. Is this young girl freaking toying with us? If it was true, he would never let her off!

"However!" Gu Ruoyun chuckled, with the glimpse in her eyes shone differently now. "Did all of you really think that this one month was a waste of time and effort? Are you going to tell me that none of you had improved at all during this one month of training? If that was true, I do not even have the need to train you guys anymore."

Having listened to her words, there were some slight changes on

the face of each and every one of them.

Gu Ruoyun was right. In this one month of training, not only had they progressed tremendously, their physiques and build strengthened greatly as well. This was not something that they could achieve easily even if they were to cultivate for six months long...

"As I have said before, perhaps my power is not strong enough right now, but in the near future, I will be so strong that none of you guys would be able to be my match even if all of you were united and combined altogether! Even if it was under my meticulous training methods."

The power that Gu Ruoyun possessed right now was nothing out of the ordinary. However, her achievements were still pretty outstanding if they were to compare to her peer group. At the very least, she was no longer the loser that she used to be back then. Still, as her cultivation period was still considerably short, there was nothing much to her success yet.

"As long as all of you follow me, I will never let you regret!" Gu Ruoyun lifted her head high up. Under the bright sun, a faint but confident smile could be seen on her delicate features. "I will train and forge all of you to become the greatest and most powerful troop ever! Even if this troop was comprised of only fifty people, it would triumph in every battle and succeed in every invasion! I believe that the main cause of you guys having persisted to the very last moment is for this very same reason as well."

Chapter 60: The Duel That Turned The Tide

(1)

The side profile of Gu Ruoyun's face was gleaming bright with confidence under the bright light of the Sun, causing Xun Feng's gaze to be in a trance and daze for a split second. All of a sudden, he made a decision at that very moment, a decision that would influence and change the rest of his life permanently.

"If you possess the strength that could help me get my revenge, I, Xun Feng, will obey your order and command for the rest of my entire life!"

In truth, from the very start, Gu Ruo Yun had had her eyes on Xun Feng the moment she met with this group of people. It was obviously because this man was the most powerful among all of them. Besides, she also had a feeling that this young man had an identity that was out of the ordinary.

"Do not worry. Since you guys have already become my followers, I promise I will never mistreat any of you." Gu Ruoyun paused for a while before continuing again, "As you can see, I have the Qi Gathering Pills in my hand now. Once you have consumed the pills, your strength will grow much rapidly."

Qi Gathering Pills?

None of these people had heard of this pill before, and they could not help but stare at Gu Ruoyun dumbfoundedly.

"Qi Gathering Pills? Are you... are you talking about pills?"

Just when every one of them was in a confused and baffled state, Elder Yu let out a yelp in surprise.

His pair of aged eyes were wide open in bewilderment and he stared fixedly at the ceramic bottle that Gu Ruoyun was holding. At this very moment, even his breath felt antsy and nervous, for fear that he would miss out a word that she said.

None of these people knew what Qi Gathering Pill was but as a member of the Dongfang family, how could he not know what it was?

That was a legendary object!! How did she manage to get her hands on those pills?

This... this was beyond incredible!

After all, even when it was tens of thousands years ago, the mere existence of Pill Master itself was considered as something immensely valuable, let alone the time right now when the Pill Master no longer existed. Even in the household of the Dongfang family, there were only two pills left in the keepsake. All the more so, they were obtained by the master in an ancient ruin. Up until today, they were being treasured as the family heirloom.

But she? Carelessly taking the pills out? On top of that, she was simply giving away the pills just like that?

This was such a disgrace!

Elder Yu stared at Gu Ruoyun exasperatedly. It was obvious that he was discontented and unhappy about the fact that she was giving out the pills just like that. Even if they were her followers, she need not be so generous!

"Elder Yu, it seems to me like your cultivation level is already at the bottleneck level. These Qi Gathering Pills will not be much use to somebody who is already at that kind of bottleneck level anyway. That is why I did not prepare one for you too. I will find you another pill that could help you to make a breakthrough past the high-level Martial General next time, alright?

Seeing the look in Elder Yu's eyes, all Gu Ruoyun could do was to just rub the tip of her nose while shrugging her shoulders.

Wh... What?

Elder Yu opened his eyes wide in surprise?

This young little girl just told me that she was able to help me make a breakthrough to the Martial King stage?

I must be hallucinating.

Yeah, that must be it. I must be hallucinating.....

In his eyes, having these many pills were already considered something bizarre and unthinkable, let alone having a pill that could help him break past the peak of the Martial Warrior stage. This scenario was totally unimaginable, something that was completely impossible.

"Hehe, Lady Gu, that is very nice of you. However, my inborn talent is not that great anyway. In virtue of my loyalty and dutiful towards him, young master permitted me to distant and hold myself aloof from the rest of the world, allowing me to spend my remaining days over here, and take care of the Hundred Herb Hall at the same time. I know my own abilities well. It is impossible for me to make anymore breakthrough for the rest of my life."

Shaking his head, Elder Yu let out a chuckle.

Having listened to his words, Gu Ruoyun did not say anything more. She spoke with a smile, "Elder Yu, please help me to distribute all of these pills to each of them. These Qi Gathering Pills will help the warriors gather and accumulate all of the Qi energy from the universe, which increases the speed of cultivation. However, only one pill can be consumed at a time. They must wait till the effects of the pill wear off before they consume another one."

Chapter 61: The Duel That Turned The Tide

(2)

Increasing the cultivation speed of a cultivator?

All of them widened their eyes in surprise and stared flabbergasted at the delicate but determined features of Gu Ruoyun.

At the same time, before they could actually process the words of Gu Ruoyun, Elder Yu had already distributed the pills to every one of them while holding the ceramic bottle in his hand. All of them swallowed the pill in doubt and immediately sat down in a cross-legged manner to start their cultivation process.

The Qi energy gradually gathered around these people, forming a fog that was green in color. If there were other people in the vicinity, they would be stunned. After all, an intense amount of Qi energy would be needed to form a fog, wouldn't it?

At this moment, none of the people dared to lose their focus even the slightest bit. They seized and made full use of every second and minute to start their cultivation, as though the commotion outside was slowly fading away.

"Haha! I broke through it! I finally made a breakthrough!"

"The effect of this Qi Gathering Pill is really astounding. It really allows our cultivation to make a breakthrough quickly!"

All of them began to laugh out loud. The moment they turned their heads and looked at Gu Ruoyun, a change could be seen in the way they looked at her.

They had a feeling that they would definitely not regret following the leadership of this young lady.

"Your subordinate, Xun Feng is hereby apologizing for my past actions of doubting and provoking you, master."

There was a flash of mixed feelings in Xun Feng's eyes. Half-kneeling down, the look on his face had changed from arrogance and haughtiness to respect.

He finally understood now why she was convinced that they would not regret being her followers!

He also believed that the things that this young lady had said was not made of empty words and promises. By following her lead, the day that he could finally get his revenge would definitely not be far away.

Gu Ruoyun smiled faintly and said, "My heart is like a devil and the way I handle matters are devilish as well. From now onwards, our troops will be known as the Devil Sect! Xun Feng will be the Left Protector while Mo Yu will be the Right Protector. Every matter and issues in the sect should be reported to both of them."

As she was speaking, she threw a glance towards Xun Feng, followed by another glance at the young lady who had not spoken a single word since the moment she entered.

From the information that Elder Yu had passed to her, she knew that the young lady was called Mo Yu. The power that she possessed was nothing out of the ordinary. However, she had a determination and perseverance that nobody else had. Besides...

Mo Yu's mental capacity was very resilient and resolute, which made her suitable to refine pills!

"Yes, Sect Master!" All of the people knelt down simultaneously and said out loud.

"Don't need to call me Sect Master ." Gu Ruoyun waved her hands and continued, "Just 'Master' or 'Lady Gu' will suffice. For the time being, all of you stay here and nobody will disturb you here. Xun Feng, Mo Yi, you two will follow me and leave this place. In five years time, I will need to let the rest of the world know about the power of the Devil Sect!"

This was precisely the reason why she needed to buy a courtyard that could fit all these people and become the temporary residence for all of them.

"Yes, Master." Xun Feng and Mo Yu replied in unison, their gaze on Gu Ruoyun, gleaming with intensity.

....

On the street, the people were bustling with activities.

Earlier on, Gu Ruoyun had inquired about a house that was situated quite close to the Hundred Herb Hall. Before she could establish the headquarter of the Devil Sect, she would first need to find a place for this group of people to stay in. After all, the place that Elder Yu had provided was a little too small and it could not fit fifty people.

Of course, this would only be a temporary accomodation. What she really needed was to find a place that was so hidden that nobody else could find it.

The moment that Gu Ruoyun walked up to the house, she saw that somebody was already in the midst of making a deal with the owner.

"You?" Ling Yu could instantly recognize Gu Ruoyun that was walking up towards them with just a glance. Her face instantaneously darkened a few shades. "Gu Ruoyun! What is a useless little girl like you doing here?"

Just the thought of herself being kicked out of the Hundred Herb Hall would make her blood boil in a rage all over again. Who would have ever thought that Gu Ruo Yun that loser was actually taken into Hundred Herb Hall to become one of the servants instead?

That's right, in Ling Yu's eyes, the reason Gu Ruoyun was taken into Hundred Herb Hall by Zhao Manager could only be to serve as a servant.

Chapter 62: The Duel That Turned The Tide

(3)

"Ling Yu? A member of the Ling Family?"

Gu Ruoyun looked at the elegantly dressed lady who was glaring at herself furiously and couldn't help but felt slightly startled.

As a matter of fact, she happened to have met Ling Yu once before, during her first visit to the Hundred Herb Hall. She had coincidentally came across the scene where Ling Yu was making a fuss and was kicked out of the Hundred Herb Hall in the end. Even though she was forced to return to apologize by Master Ling, she was still refused an entrance by the Hundred Herb Hall.

Never did she thought that she would run into Ling Yu over here again.

"What are you doing here?"

Because of Ling Xi, Ling Yu's eyes blazed with hatred the moment she set her eyes on Gu Ruoyun. The glint in her eyes was as sharp as a sword, ruthlessly directed towards the young girl who was standing by the door; how she wished she could inflict some marks on that delicate little face of hers.

Gu Ruoyun glanced past Ling Yu and finally, her gaze landed on the middle-aged man who was standing right in front of her, "How much does it cost for this house?"

Before the middle-aged man could even open his mouth, a sardonic jeer was heard coming out from Ling Yu's mouth.

"You little bitch! Don't you dare have the idea that being part of the Hundred Herb Hall could allow you to be self-righteous and conceited! Come to think of it, you're only a mere servant of the Hundred Herb Hall. Do you really think that you could use the influence of the Hundred Herb Hall to your advantage, obtain this house by force and make it yours? Let me tell you something. I

bought this place as a gift to the crown prince because he was thinking about moving out from the palace lately. The crown prince is from the Weapon Refining Sect! Even if Hundred Herb Hall was that strong, it won't be able to beat the power of the Weapon Refining Sect at all, let alone making an enemy against the Weapon Refining Sect for the sake of a small petty servant like you!"

Ling Yu spoke while lifting her little face up high in aloofness.

Just the thought of herself being chunked out from the Hundred Herb Hall was enough to make her gnarl her teeth in hatred.

But it didn't matter - wait till she became the crown prince's wife. That small little Hundred Herb Hall would then become her property in no time! When that time finally came, she could freely decide the fate of Gu Ruoyun, that mere servant of the Hundred Herb Hall!

"How much is this house?"

As though not listening to a word that Ling Yu said, Gu Ruoyun continued her inquiries.

"Gu Ruoyun, I am talking to you right now! How dare you ignore me!"

Ling Yu's little face became scarlet in anger, her eyes glaring in rage at Gu Ruoyun.

"Oh?"

Finally, Gu Ruoyun showed some reaction and lifted a brow while looking at Ling Yu. Smiling happily, she said, "You were talking to me? I'm sorry, I thought you were muttering to yourself."

Pffft!

Ling Yu almost spit a mouthful of blood out when she heard this. Her little face livid with rage, her eyes glinting with resentment

and her teeth clenched in annoyance. "Gu Ruoyun, it's better for you to scram now! You can't afford this house at all! Not to mention the fact that you have no right at all to compete with the crown prince!"

Swoosh!

In an instant, a swift and fierce double-edged sword abruptly appeared and rested on the neck of Ling Yu. Instantaneously, her whole body went rigidly cold, and when she lifted her eyes up, they were met with a pair of supercilious and chilly eyes.

"You better shut your mouth up! Otherwise..."

Looking at Ling Yu coldly, Xun Feng said in a bone-chilling tone.

"Do you... Do you even know who I am? My aunt is the highest-ranking imperial concubine. How dare you threaten me? Wait till I go back and tell my aunt! She will wipe off your whole clan!"

The look in Xun Feng eyes darkened a few shades and without warning, he let out an icy-cold laugh, "Who cares if your aunt's the imperial concubine or even the queen herself? Whoever dares to offend my master will end in death!"

In the eyes of this young man, Ling Yu could clearly see his killing intention.

That was right! This fellow really did intend to kill her. This was not just a mere intimidation attempt.

In that instant, Ling Yu turned pale in fright, her legs shaking uncontrollably. Not even a proper sentence could be strung out from her mouth.

"Xun Feng, I am here for a serious affair. As for other matters, take care of them some other time instead," Gu Ruoyun threw a glance at Xun Feng as she spoke.

Having heard her words, only then did the killing intent that was exuded from Xun Feng's body dissolved away.

Unmistakably, Ling Yu let out a sigh of relief. Just a short while ago, she really had the feeling that the grim reaper was just standing right beside her.

Chapter 63: The Duel That Turned The Tide

(4)

If it was someone else, that person would have tried to leave the scene as soon as possible - afraid that the young man would change his mind of killing her anytime.

However, Ling Yu was no ordinary person.

This house was serene and quiet, the surrounding environment was pretty good as well. No matter what, she still wanted to buy this house as a present for the crown prince. If she could really make the crown prince happy, perhaps she would be able to become his imperial concubine...

As she was thinking about this, Ling Yu calmed herself down and turned her head to look at the middle-aged man. "The price that you've set for the house is too expensive. Even though the surrounding ambient is quite nice, it is not worth as much as eight million gold coins. I will offer you eight hundred thousand, take it or leave it."

"Are you kidding me, young lady? Eight hundred thousands gold coins? Is this daylight robbery?" The middle-aged man let out a snort of laughter, "As I've said before, this price is too low. No way I would accept it!"

Having heard this, Ling Yu lifted her head high up in haughtiness. "You better think about it carefully! I'm buying this as a present that to gift it to the crown prince. Such a good opportunity to please him, and you plan to let it go just like that? It's not that I'm calling you an idiot but this is seriously quite a fool of you! Do you even know how many people in this world would do anything just to get on the crown prince's good side? If it weren't for me, Ling Yu, would you even have gotten this chance? It's already amazing that I didn't ask you to present me eight million gold coins as a token of gratitude. Besides, it's not like I'm taking

this house for free. Didn't I plan on giving you five hundred thousands as a compensation?"

In Ling Yu's eyes, the crown prince was in a prominent position that not anyone could even go near to him. Now that she was giving him a chance to get on his good side, he should have been the one presenting her a few million gold coins to show his gratitude instead. After all, not everybody could come across such good opportunity.

At once, the middle-aged man was at loss of whether to cry or laugh. Having his house taken away by force? And even go so far as to have to thank her for that? He had never heard of such outrageous nonsense before.

"Lady Ling, my wife is now sick with a critical illness. Only the ghost doctor can cure her of the illness. However, the price of the ghost doctor is eight million gold coins. I have no other alternative but to sell this house. Please don't make things difficult for us. I am already at wit's end now."

Ghost doctor?

When she heard the words of the middle-aged man, Gu Ruoyun's heart leaped a little but she remained quiet.

"What an idiotic person you are!" Ling Yu responded with a sneer, "Your wife is a mere low life, how could she be compared to a comfortable dwelling place for the crown prince? As long as you get on the good side of the crown prince, you would have a promising future ahead of you, even the most beautiful woman would willingly fall into your arms. I am sure your wife's not that selfish to want to destroy your future, isn't she? Otherwise, why would you still want this kind of woman around?"

The face on the middle-aged man immediately took on a ghastly expression. "Lady Ling, it's not that I don't want the crown prince to stay here! As long as you could give me the eight million gold coins, this house would automatically belong to you!"

"You....."

Just when Ling Yu was about to open her mouth to respond, Gu Ruoyun's voice was suddenly heard.

"Can you sell this house to me then? I'm willing to make an offer of eight million gold coins!"

The heart of the middle-aged man gave a leap of joy. Lifting up his head, his glance shifted towards Gu Ruoyun instead.

This time, he carefully observed the young girl who was standing in front of him.

That delicate face of hers still showed a sign of adolescence and puberty; her not fully grown and yet-to-be-developed body made her look meager and undernourished at the same time. However, her face was lighted up with a faint smile, along with a pair of bright and well-lit eyes. Perhaps the first impression she gave off was not captivating nor breathtaking enough, but she undeniably exuded a pleasant and warm aura.

"Young Lady, you wanted to buy a house?"

"That's right," Gu Ruoyun smiled as she spoke. "As for those gold coins, just go to the Hundred Herb Hall and inform Elder Yu, he will give the coins to you. He will also be the one handling all the take-over matters and arrangements. However..."

Chapter 64: The Duel That Turned The Tide

(5)

Gu Ruoyun paused a while before continuing, "I am very interested in the healing art. I hope that I could come and have a look when the ghost doctor shows up to treat the illness."

"This...." The middle-aged man hesitated for a while before he spoke again, "I'm not in a position to make a decision about this. I would have to ask permission from the ghost doctor first. Although the ghost doctor has quite a good skill, his temper can be a little peculiar. If he was fond of somebody, he'd heal that person without even asking for one gold coin as payment. However, if he didn't like that person, he would never bother to treat him at all even if a whole country was given to him as a repayment."

"It's alright, just inform me when the time comes."

Fondling her chin, Gu Ruoyun gave a sinister smile.

When she first came to the West Spirit Mainland, she had also heard of the reputation of the ghost doctor before. If she could manage to take him into the Devil Sect, she would not have to worry anything about medical field anymore...

"Master, your smile is a little terrifying."

A cold shiver ran down the Mo Yu's spine. Why did she have a feeling that master was going to do something bad?

"Xun Feng, Mo Yu, let's go!"

Gu Ruoyun did not take offense about what Mo Yu said at all. She shrugged her shoulders and gave her final word before she turned and left the house.

Watching the slender silhouette slowly disappeared, Ling Yu couldn't help clenching her pink fists together, stressing each syllabus as she said, "Gu Ruoyun, I'll let you be arrogant this time!"

Wait till big brother's done with his cultivation, you'll then meet with your death sentence!"

Ling household.

Inside the secret room, the young man who was sitting cross-legged at first slowly opened his eyes where a glimpse of dark light flashed past.

"I finally succeeded in cultivating the secret technique that Lady Shi Yun passed on to me and right now, it's finally the time for me to get my revenge! Just you wait and see, Gu Ruoyun! I will defeat you in front of everybody in just two days time! Then, I'll finally pay off old scores!

...

In regards to the plans of the Ling family, Gu Ruoyun obviously had no clue at all. Recently, she had been so busy that she did not have time left to even pay the slightest attention to them.

"That's right, Elder Yu. Has Dongfang young master left yet?"

As if recalling something in her mind, Gu Ruoyun turned her head towards Elder Yu and asked.

Nodding his head, Elder Yu's eyes were filled with concern. "Something has happened to the Dongfang family. Young master has been summoned by the master to go back home."

"Something has happened?" Gu Ruoyun knitted her brows together, asking, "What's happened to the Dongfang family? Also, is the Weapon Refining Sect still in Azure Dragon Country?"

Every time she met with Dongfang Shaoze, she would always feel a sense of warmth and friendliness. Naturally, she would not want anything bad to happen to him.

"That's right."

Elder Yu laughed out grimly, "Not only that, the spies of the Weapon Refining Sect always comes to the entrance of the Gu

family household to scoop for news. It seems like they will not give up until they've achieved their purpose. It's so unfortunate that the Dongfang family has met with such mishap, otherwise, they wouldn't have let the Weapon Refining Sect off easily."

Gu Ruoyun said while shaking her head, "There's no need for Dongfang Shaoze's subordinate to take action. You see, I don't like to rely on others."

Opening his mouth like he was going to say something, but Elder Yu paused before he closed his mouth again eventually.

A few days after.

The entire Azure Dragon Country was shaken by a piece of news.

"Did you hear about it? The young master of the Ling family, Ling Xi, plans to have a duel with the loser who got kicked out of the Gu family two days later! On top of that, the judge will be no other than the master warriors from the Weapon Refining Sect."

"It is said that this duel was set by both parties a few months before, but it seems like somehow it got called off again. Perhaps it was Gu Ruoyun who chickened her way out. I can't believe that she has the guts to accept the challenge again!"

"This time, the news was released by the Ling family. Both of them have even made a promise that if Gu Ruoyun lost the duel, Hundred Herb Hall's ownership would be passed on to the Ling family from now onwards! I wonder why did the manager of the Hundred Herb Hall agree to such conditions? It is an obvious fact that they're giving away the Hundred Herb hall just like that. That Gu Ruoyun was nothing more than a servant of the hall. How is it worth it to agree to that kind of promise for her sake?"

Chapter 65: The Duel That Turned The Tide

(6)

Right now, in the Great Hall of the Ling family, Elder Ling was looking at Ling Xi with his brows knitted together. Feeling a sense of discontentment, he said, "I know that you are worried about Gu Ruoyun refusing to accept your challenge right now, which is why you've purposely spread the rumor about her accepting the duel! However, the Hundred Herb Hall is not of ordinary! With such a lies of yours, you could easily piss off the forces behind the Hundred Herbal Hall!"

With a shady smile on his face, Ling Xi said, "Grandfather, please don't forget that the Weapon Refining Sect is our backup force! Besides that, haven't you always wanted to obtain the Hundred Herb Hall for yourself? This is a good opportunity! I've already let the words out. It doesn't matter whether the commoners believe it or not. If the Hundred Herb Hall dares to step out to clear the rumors, they will only be looked down upon by the others!"

Recalling the valuable medicinal herbs in the Hundred Herb Hall, Elder Ling couldn't help but felt a leap in his heart. Dejectedly, he responded, "Do as you please then. However, you must succeed without fail in this duel!"

"Don't worry, grandfather. Now, I'm already in the level of Martial Warrior. Gu Ruoyun is just a mere Level four in the Qi Collection stage. She is definitely not my match!"

Ling Xi spoke with full confidence.

It had only been slightly over a month. Even if Gu Ruoyun was no longer a loser, there was absolutely no way she could make that much progress!

As for him, he had managed to become a real Martial Warrior in a mere one month...

.....

In the courtyard, Luo Yin, who had a face full of freckles, was furious in anger. Exasperated, she looked at Gu Ruoyun.

"Gu Ruoyun, in two days time, you will have to duel it out with that asshole Ling Xi. How can you still have the heart to sunbathe right now? That old man of the Ling family is very cunning and sly. If he wasn't certain of his success, he wouldn't have let his precious grandson go to the duel at all."

"Duel?" Squinting her mouth, Gu Ruoyun replied without much care, "The battle between Ling Xi and I has already ended a long time ago. He had already lost to me in the Heavenly Spirit Formation; that's why this duel can just be ignored now."

"How is that possible? The outside world is talking about the duel between you and Ling Xi that's about to take place in two days time. They even used the Hundred Herb Hall as a leverage!"

Luo Yin's mouth was widely opened in astonishment. Did Gu Ruoyun not know a thing about the duel at all? What was actually happening right now?

Having heard this, Gu Ruoyun began to sit up, her bright eyes slowly darkened bit by bit. "I've been very busy these few days. I have absolutely no clue as to whatever that is happening outside. Tell me right now - what is this situation here?"

Seeing clearly that Gu Ruoyun was without a clue, Luo Yin blinked her eyes and proceeded to slowly tell her everything about the rumors that were spreading wildly outside.

Little by little, Gu Ruoyun's smiling face slowly became cold. After a long moment of silence, she spoke with a sneer, "Duel? This must be something that was thought of by Ling Xi. What a pity for him. He really shouldn't have involved the Hundred Herb Hall at all. However, since he had already done that, then I would have no idea choice but to give him a dose of his own medicine."

It seemed like before she could seek trouble with the Ling family, they had, by themselves come knocking on the door first.....

Two days later.

Outside of the Hundred Herb Hall, the place was fully packed with people. It was evidently clear that all of them were here to watch the duel between Gu Ruoyun and Ling Xi. Right at this moment, a loud sound was suddenly heard, prompting the crowds to clear a path and make way.

Under the watchful eyes of the people, Ling Xi slowly walked forwards. Compared to the arrogance he had back then, he now possessed an extra aura of foul and evil-foreboding air, gloomy and cold to the max.

"Gu Ruoyun, I know that you are inside the Hundred Herb Hall. Since it is now time for the battle that we have agreed on, why are you still not out yet to meet with me? Unless you have decided to flee at the very last minute?"

When Ling Xi walked up to the entrance of the Hundred Herb Hall, his feet came to a halt and his face a streak shady ferocious.

The disgrace and humiliation that she had brought him at one time would now be returned back to this bloody damned woman!

Chapter 66: The Duel That Turned The Tide

(7)

"Ling Xi, you brave little scum! You dare show that face of yours in my Hundred Herb Hall?" No sooner had his voice left the air, in came Shopkeeper Zhao with thundering footsteps. His gaze sliced through the air between him and Ling Xi as he added in distaste, "Here's your best chance to get the f*ck out ¹, wretch. Hundred Herb Hall has no interest in seeing anyone from the Ling Family!"

Ling Xi laughed dryly at his threat.

"Oh.... Shopkeeper Zhao. C'mon. Your little establishment already has a new master in waiting! Sure, Gu Ruoyun promised results within a month, but hey! I pride myself as the compassionate kind, so I extended her little promise to two months — just so she could squeeze in whatever little bit of improvement she can do! It's just that...only you people would be optimistic enough to bet the Hundred Herb Hall on that loser. From the way I see it, that's just a roundabout way of pleading for me to own this place, man. Don't you worry, with my guidance though, this place will have its worth doubled!"

When one had the support of the mighty Weapon Refining Sect, there was no need for courtesy and pleasantries — even if the opponent now was someone as formidable as the Hundred Herb Hall. All that they had just could not possibly match the Weapon Refining Sect anyway!

"The Hundred Herb Hall has never seen such a shameless proposal — EVER!" Shopkeeper Zhao was enraged as he balled his hands into fists.

"Aww...Are you finally smart enough to be afraid of what I can achieve now?" Ling Xi smirked.

His words stirred the crowd as they turned their attention to this

trespasser. The murmurs started.

"A lower level Martial Warrior? Ling Xi has already broken through to level eight in the Qi Collection ranks, and has now attained the stage of a lower level Martial Warrior! How did I not see that?"

"Damn it! Wasn't he only at, like, level 5 last month? How did he even attain that stage so quickly?"

"Huh, guess the Hundred Herb Hall got used to underestimating everyone. Now that this kid is showing them what he's really got, it's too late for them to eat their words now!"

All eyes were filled with mockery as they started directing their remarks at Shopkeeper Zhao. This unfounded contempt enraged him so much that he wanted to annihilate that son of a bitch right there and then!

The situation was tense as two sides seemed to be locked into a stand-off.

Suddenly, a jaunty laughter was heard. "It's fine, Shopkeeper Zhao. Let me handle this."

Milady ² ? The shopkeeper's eyes lit up at the voice, quickly turning to find himself in the presence of Lady Ruoyun herself. His mouth was agape as he tried to say something.

"There you are, Gu Ruoyun. I've been oh-so-waiting for you," Ling Xi sneered. His expression darkened immediately like a storm the moment he saw her.

"Now that you're finally here, the time is ripe — for us to duel!"

"A duel?" Gu Ruoyun laughed with a tinkle. "Not that I'm against it, but are you really that willing to break your end of the deal?"

"What deal?"

'If you lose, all properties of the Ling family belong to me, remember? While you'll have to kneel before me and call me your

Master. Plus, the extra benefit of calling that old geezer of yours an old dotard."

"THAT'S BULLCRAP!" Ling Xi's face unraveled as he retorted in bluster. "I'd agreed to no such terms!"

She raised her brow. "But then... Why else would it be possible for me to bet the entire Hundred Herbs Hall in this duel?"

"That's...IT!" Ling Xi shouted, his chest about to explode in fire and fury. "That's some bait you got there, Gu Ruoyun. Do you honestly think that you can defeat me? You're just a pitiful trash whose best move is gathering Qi. You're not even an actual Martial Warrior yet! I can give you a hundred lifetimes just to try, and you'd still have no hope against me!"

Let's face it. Qi gathering did not make one a martial artist. It was a "NOOB'S ONLY!" skill set

Chapter 67: The Duel That Turned The Tide

(8)

The morning sun streamed down onto the young maiden, adding clarity to her lightly curled lips. The breeze danced with her hair as sunlight danced on her carefree grin. Her eyes, clear as a lake on a sunny day, reflected the silhouette of the furious young man before her.

"Looks like you'd finally manned up and admit to making that bet with me. You better not go back on your words or you're going to be such a disgrace that your family won't be able to live in the Azure Dragon Kingdom anymore!"

"Hahaha!" Ling Xi laughed before he replied, "I, on the other hand, can't wait to see you get your ass handed to you. This Hundred Herb Hall is as good as mine! By then I won't even have to teach you a lesson, the master of this hall would naturally teach you a lesson on my behalf already!"

If that were to happen, it would, of course, spell doom to Gu Ruoyun. After all, this was the only asylum she had right now.

Shopkeeper Zhao rolled his eyes at Ling Xi's egoistic claims but he said nothing outwardly. "The master of the Hundred Herbs Hall? You mean Lady Gu Ruoyun herself? I wonder what kind of punishment would Gu Ruoyun give to herself? Seriously, forget about teaching others a lesson, this punk here is the one who needs to be taught a lesson," he thought to himself.

Luo Yin was worried nonetheless. She turned to Gu Ruoyun. "Will you really be okay?"

"Please just wait for me by the side."

Gu Ruoyun quickly turned her attention again to Ling Xi. "Alright, shall we begin?"

"Hang on a minute!" He interjected, looking at his opponent in

skepticism. "I am afraid that there would be cheating involved. Therefore I have taken preventative measure and I have requested help. If you please, Lady Yun! Elder Hun Fei!"

Swoosh!

Instantly after he made his statement, a flash of white floated down from the air above like a freshly molted petal still with its lingering fragrance. The girl's hair drifted in the wind along with her white robe. She was like an angelic being descending from the heaven. The crowd was bewitched by this ethereal beauty, yet they also felt compelled to steer their eyes away from her to avoid tarnishing her divine grace with their mortal gaze.

Shi Yun's eyes were scanning the crowd, however. When she couldn't find what she was looking for, her eyebrows furrowed a little.

"She can fly?" Gu Ruoyun's eyes narrowed at Shi Yun's demonstration. "That's an ability only Martial Emperors have. Her strength still has a long way to go before reaching that rank! No doubt about it. She had somehow learned the secrets to flight."

Right at that moment, the crowd parted as a group of men marched in with Hun Fei right in the middle, leading the troop. His attention was on Gu Ruoyun. When his gaze found her, a wave of killing intent radiated out of his entire body instantly as the air crackled with his murderous and ruthless presence.

"Gu Ruoyun! As much as I want to settle our scores, today I'm here for little master Ling's matter. You should know that the duel today is a battle of life and death. Both sides will sign a death waiver. Only fate can decide who shall live and who shall die. No one is to interfere!"

The crowd had gathered here because there was going to be a duel between two formidable clans but no one mentioned a death waiver! What it means was that the duel would only be concluded once one of them died. The only way for a loser to survive this duel

was if the victor was compassionate and decides to spare the life of his opponent. Other than that, even if the loser pleaded for their life, it would not have made any difference.

It looked like this time, this Ling family was resolute in killing off Gu Ruoyun.

"Gu Ruoyun!" Luo Yin's face lost its color as she exclaimed, "You can't do it! Don't sign the death waiver!"

"Do it! Sign it, you piece of shit. Just die already so that you would stop embarrassing the Gu family!" That voice came from among the spectators. It was none other than Gu Panpan who was watching Gu Ruoyun with a sinister gaze.

Her father would not have blamed her and her mother would not have almost been divorced if Gu Ruoyun had never existed.

It was all... that bitch's fault!

Chapter 68: The Duel That Turned The Tide

(9)

Gu Ruoyun stood still and stared at Hun Fei. She remained quiet.

"Aww, are you scared?" Ling Xi laughed mockingly. "Just forfeit the duel then! Keep that pitiful life of yours! Not that it doesn't sadden me though, seeing the late Gu Tian's daughter being such a spineless wimp. What an embarrassment to your kin! In fact, I am almost glad that your parents are long dead, or the cause of their death would probably be from shame!"

He truly enjoyed needling her.

Gu Ruoyun's surrounding temperature started to plummet at his words. When she looked up, her eyes were coated with a layer of frost. "You'll regret your words! I am signing that waiver!"

"Regret?" He pursed his lips in annoyance. "Spoken by somebody who already knows that they are going to be regretting their choice later. I guess what happens when you don't have a father and mother to raise you is that you would grow up from an uncultured brat into a conceited one."

"Seriously", he thought to himself. "I'm already a Martial Warrior. Who does this woman think she is?"

Hun Fei looked at the two of them, then declared, "After signing that waive, the duel shall now begin!"

The two did as they were told, signing the presented waivers in one confident swoop after briefly scanning its content.

Luo Yin pushed her way forcefully through the throng of people but the crowd was already riled up by the turns of events and it made it hard for her to even move an inch. She could only look at the direction of the fight in anxious frustration.

"Gu Ruoyun. The only reason why I would grant you a less

humiliating defeat would be for the sake of Gu Shengxiao only!"—

Before he even finished his sentence, a white strike of lightning flashed across, Ling Xi's sword was already drawn and cleaving towards Gu Ruoyun's direction. The blade was quickly approaching her head but she managed to dodge at the last millisecond.

WHAM!

A deep cut was carved into the door behind her.

Ling Xi's body seemed to be flickering in and out of existence as he sped towards her. Closing the distance between himself and Gu Ruoyun, his hands were firmly clutching his sword. A ribbon of black light sliced through the air as the cold killing intent was released from each sword strike.

She shifted and ducked. Every single strike looked as if it would be a deathblow to Gu Ruoyun, yet she managed to evade every one of them in the very nick of time—it really was starting to piss the man off. A Martial Warrior who could not even strike at his opponent? Especially when so many people were watching! How the hell was anyone going to respect him now?

This is embarrassing!

"Level 6! She's at the sixth stage of Qi Gathering rank already!" Someone from the crowd exclaimed in awe.

Wasn't that Gu Ruoyun infamously referred to as a good-for-nothing? How did she gain that much power and attained the sixth level of Qi gathering? Sure, it was not as tremendous as Ling Xi's growth but it was still quite a surprise, especially with her infamous reputation!

"Pfft. Please. The 6th stage of Qi gathering level, so what?" Hun Fei snickered at what he deemed was an overreaction." With that trash of a skill, she can't even be accepted into the Weapon Refining Sect. Anyone from the sect, even a cleaner working with a

broomstick, would already be a Martial Warrior."

To Hun Fei, anyone who was still firmly entrenched in the Qi gathering ranks was too preposterous to be taken seriously. The only real purpose—his mission—in the Azure Dragon Kingdom was to find the host of the spirit of the greatest warrior ever to grace this land. He just could not find that chosen one yet.

"Having a lot of fun dodging around, aren't you! Play time's over. I'm ending your little game right now!" Ling Xi bared his teeth in fury. His aura shot up and storm clouds started forming above him.

"Hmm...." Gu Ruoyun thought to herself, her brows furrowing. "If I'm not mistaken... The technique that he had been practicing is —"

"—PAY ATTENTION, LITTLE GIRL!"

Within the deepest part of her soul came Zixie's worried warning.

Chapter 69: I'm A Nice Person (1)

Everyone could feel the growth in Ling Xi's strength.

Yet, Gu Ruoyun only looked at him with an obscure expression.

Since the battle had started, she had felt that something was off with Ling Xi's cultivation base, as if it was unstable. This meant that although he might appear to be a Martial Warrior, his true strength was only as high as the 7th level of the Qi collection ranks.

But had his master not caution him about the downside of practicing this cultivation technique? Did he know that he could NEVER use whatever offensive ultimate techniques that he had? He might deal the same damage as an actual Martial Warrior would with this technique but it would cost him his ability to ever cultivate again in this life!

He was sacrificing his entire life's strength— just to get back at her.

"Hahaha!" Ling Xi gave a loud, unhinged laughter amidst the chaos. Malice and revenge had completely consumed whatever shred of humanity that was left in him. "Don't blame me for what I'm about to do, Gu Ruoyun! You signed the waiver, so now I'm gonna fulfill the terms. Say hi to your mother and father!"

White cold light reflected off his blade. His presence had shifted immediately before her. His blade might be cold but it was nothing compared to the lunatic, eager grin on his face, brought upon by the thought of his blade severing Gu Ruoyun's neck—

Smash!

In a move to defend herself, Gu Ruoyun managed to find herself a wooden club and she swung it when Ling Xi was about to strike. The club blocked the sword, parrying its physical blow, but the two combatants' energy pitted themselves against one another,

letting out a shockwave of light that pulverized all the debris it came in contact with. The ground shook at the force.

In the aftermath, there was blood.

Blood was streaming down from her arm where the shockwave had ripped open a wound. The red liquid dripped down, pooling around Gu Ruoyun, painting a grotesque picture of her in the center.

Ling Xi was not the slightest bit deterred. He sneered, and in the next millisecond, he had somehow stepped into her personal space, right behind her.

"Gu Ruoyun! Behind you!" Luo Yin screamed from the crowd frantically.

Humans have always had that instinctive feeling when someone is watching them intensely, and Gu Ruoyun acted on that instinct, spinning her body — just in time to see the oncoming blade slashing towards her forehead, and hear the man's hatred-filled voice,

"The disgrace you brought to me at the Heavenly Spirit Formation... The Shame... I will return it all to you! Die, Gu Ruoyun!"

The yell seemed to have echoed off his blade as he swung it definitively to her head. He had completely forgotten Shi Yun's request...

"No!" Shi Yun's expression darkened. "Gu Ruoyun could not be killed in this way—her mental energy would be lost! Ling Xi you moron—you're ruining everything!"

It was too late. There was nothing she could do to interfere—

"You motherf*ckers! Stop right there!"

Elder Yu did not expect to see this scene as he rushed over from work. This... it was really bad for his heart!

In fact, this was tremendously, colossally and extremely bad. If young master knew this... If he knew what was happening to Gu Ruoyun, heads would roll in the Azure Dragon Kingdom. That year when young master heard that his beloved eldest sister was caught in a tight spot, he had stormed off to the Azure Dragon Kingdom with storm clouds and lightning. He had to be forcefully captured and dragged home by the Master himself, with an addition of a few years of being grounded as penance!

The young master was not a rebellious person by nature. He was a nice person—as long as nobody hurts the people he cared about. Yet lo and behold, his favorite Lady Gu was here, inches away from death by the hands and sword of that Ling family son of a bitch! Anyone could imagine how furious young master would be. He would have to relive the pain of losing another relative—the bitter anger birthed from within would be so immense that even the Master would not be able to contain it this time!

Ling Xi, you dumb*ss son of a b*tch!!!!

Chapter 70: I'm A Nice Person (2)

A low-level aristocrat like the Ling family could not hope to deter the Young Master now, could they? Facing the Three Great Authorities, the family would perish in no time. Sure, Young Master looked pretty gentle and mild, but have you ever heard of the phrase 'Still water runs deep'? Only fools would dare test the Young Master of the reputable Dong Fang family! Who would dare expect him to have nothing to back up his prestigious position in such a renowned family?

Boom!

Just as Elder Yu thought he was really going to kick the bucket from cardiac arrest (what with witnessing the origin story of Young Master's future fury), a sword suddenly materialized before Gu Ruoyun.

It looked out of place. Instead of dazzling in regal metallic luster, it looked like it belonged to the scrap metal heap — both the hilt and the blade were covered in thick, brown rust. Yet, it was precisely this very scrap-metal sword that had parried Ling Xi's assault. His sword, so sharpened in its killing intent, was so easily halted by a rusty, seemingly-decrepit sword!

"What?! Now that was just anti-climatic! I thought it was gonna be something huge!"

"Is that even a legit Martial Warrior technique or something? Cause that? Sucked. Can't you even beat someone on the 6th level in the Qi gathering ranks? Go home and get good, son!"

"Did Ling Xi hold back? He's gotta be holding back right? How else would that be so easily blocked?"

As the crowd reeled from their bewilderment, they started littering the air with their comments. No matter what they said, the content was all similar; no one could believe what just

happened between Gu Ruoyun and Ling Xi. After all, they already saw the gap in power between those two. A level 6 Qi gathering practitioner stopping the assault of a low-level Martial Warrior — was like a knife being stopped by a slice of butter!

"Oh," Gu Ruoyun said, grinning, "I didn't plan to use this, mind you. Look what you made me do!"

Ah, well. What shall I do next? Oh, yes. You wanted me dead, didn't you?"

Ling Xi quickly recovered from his shock. "So what if I did?" He sneered, "I don't think you can say the same for yourself. You and I are different. Unlike me, YOU don't have the balls to even TOUCH me. After all, you KNOW you won't live long if you actually dare harm me."

Elder Yu shook his head at his blatant provocation. Any well intentions Lady Gu had to spare Ling Xi's pitiful life might as well as be non-existent after that uncalled challenge. That, he was sure of.

What he was not sure of, however, was whatever Lady Gu had conjured to defend herself. He studied the rusty blade intently, trying to figure out its characteristics. "It's atypical, yes, but it doesn't look like a Spiritual Tool of any kind now, does it? How did she summon it?

Maybe....maybe the experts at the Weapon Refining Sect would be able to discern its origin..."

Hun Fei had been watching the battle unfolding with cold indifference. His eyes only briefly widened the moment Gu Ruoyun summoned that rusty sword. After examining it briskly though, his eyebrows creased a little in surprise wrapped with mockery. "That? That isn't even a legitimate spiritual weapon! It's even crippled. Pathetic."

"A crippled spiritual weapon might be loosely identified as one of

the spiritual weapons, but its might could never match the real ones. By that gaping flaw alone, Gu Ruoyun's feat bore nothing worth a closer look, or warrant any care and attention from the Weapon Refining Sect," he thought.

Meanwhile, back on the battleground, Gu Ruoyun raised her eyebrow in doubtful curiosity, her smile even more sugary. "Oh? What horrible end could POSSIBLY turn out if I removed one scoundrel off the face of this kingdom? I guess...I can only find out after killing you!"

"Oh yeah?! Come on then!"

Ling Xi's face contorted into an inhuman grin. His body dashed into a blurry motion towards Gu Ruoyun with the force of a gale. His blade dazzled with intense eagerness for blood.

He was drawing closer and closer.

Gu Ruoyun stroke the air before her gently with her Crippled Spirit Sword.

Immediately, a huge gust of air bent to the motion and will of her blade, rolling in, piling, forming into a gigantic typhoon that knocked Ling Xi a few steps off his deadly pursue.

Everyone saw it and could vouch for it: she had just made a small, gentle movement. Nothing more, yet the force...

"Don't tell me....don't tell me that this was the treasure that wretched woman got from within the Heavenly Spirit Formation back then?!" A man among the crowd exclaimed in his mind as he rubbed in his eyes in disbelief.

His mind replayed how he had tried to snatch Gu Ruoyun's treasure back then in the Divine Spirit Formation. Back then, he had all of his dignity forcefully stomped by that young lady and had not recovered since. He only came here to watch the fight. Who was going to win? He was hoping that Ling Xi would be the one who would take care of her.

Yet, he did not expect to see the complete opposite of a curb-stomping defeat!

Chapter 71: I'm A Nice Person (3)

How funny. When Gu Ruoyun had asked him to come take it, he had heavily insulted her.

"Cough! Cough!"

Ling Xi coughed out two mouthfuls of blood. His sinister and merciless gaze locked onto Gu Ruoyun.

"You little bitch, you're f*cking dead!"

Fwah!

His voice had barely faded when he picked up his sword again and rushed towards Gu Ruoyun.

Gu Ruoyun held tightly onto her sword. A sudden gust of wind broke out of the spirit sword from between her fingers. Ling Xi had barely reacted when an immense pressure was generated by the spirit sword, stopping him in his tracks again for two seconds.

Within the span of these two seconds, Gu Ruoyun was already standing in front of him. The long sword hilt smashed forcefully into Ling Xi's stomach. He spat out fresh blood as he tumbled and fell.

"You..."

Ling Xi had just opened his mouth when he saw a black-clothed lady walking towards him.

Under the sun, that thin frame of a body seemed to be wrapped in a glow. A faint smile could be seen on her delicate and pretty face. However, right now, Ling Xi had an uneasy feeling that it was a demon smiling at him, making his hairs stood on end.

"What do you want? Gu Ruoyun, I'm warning you, my aunt is the reigning sovereign Royal Empress! I also have the Weapon Refining Sect as my backer. Before you hurt me, you had better think carefully about your own safety!"

When he felt the icy cold on his neck, he looked nervously at Gu Ruoyun and bellowed recklessly.

When she heard this, Gu Ruoyun put away her sword.

Immediately, Ling Xia felt relieved. A hint of pride glowed on his face.

With these backers, even if she was given a hundred guts, she would not dare to kill him!

"Kill you?" Gu Ruoyun smiled. "I'm a nice person. How could I possibly kill you? Ling Xi, you are already a good-for-nothing. Even if you cultivate your ass off, it will all be in vain. If that's the case, then I'll let you become a good-for-nothing through and through. After this, if you need me to help set you free or drag out your ignoble existence, you decide."

All the time she was saying this, Gu Ruoyun was the perfect portrayal of a nice person, all smiles.

"You..."

Ling Xi had only uttered a word when a bone-piercing pain came from his wrist. He almost fainted from the pain.

That hurt!

A lot!

Other than bone grinding, the greatest pain in the world was the snapping of the hamstrings and tendons.

And this woman had snapped the hamstrings on his legs and the tendons in his wrists.

"Aaaahhhhhhh!"

Under the intense pain, Ling Xi shouted and wailed. When Gu Ruoyun snapped his second leg hamstring, he was knocked out by the pain.

"Ling Xi, this time, I'm helping Gu Ruoyun have her revenge."

Gu Ruoyun was her, and she was Gu Ruoyun.

Although the previous death of Gu Ruoyun was connected to the old man of the Gu family, he could not be completely blameless as well. Snapping his hamstrings was the best reprisal for him...

"Xi'er!"

Suddenly, a furious howl abruptly broke the air.

When Gu Ruoyun turned around to look, she saw an old figure bolting towards them from the crowd.

With red eyes, Ling Yi looked at Ling Xi who was lying in a pool of blood. He slowly turned his gaze towards Gu Ruoyun. His eyeballs looked as if they were about to burst as he growled, "Gu Ruoyun, you dared to harm my grandson. Today, I want you to pay back a thousand times over!"

It's useless to even beg for mercy now!"

Death to her! Only her death could make up for what she did to his grandson!

When he thought of this, Ling Yi charged towards Gu Ruoyun in a fury. His killing intent was spread out across the land.

Just when he was about to reach the young lady, a figure blocked the lady with a raised hand and intercepted Ling Yi's attack...

Chapter 72: Sinister Old Man Ling (1)

Elder Yu held tightly onto Ling Yi's fist, a cold gleam showing in his old eyes.

"Master Ling, as an elder, I don't think it's right for you to meddle in a match between young ones, no?"

"Get lost!"

A roar came from Ling Yi's mouth. His eyes were bloodshot with hatred, as if wanting to ravage human flesh. "I don't care about if there's a match or not. I only know that she has made my grandson into a good-for-nothing, and that she must die here today!"

Elder Yu laughed out loudly. "Master Ling, your grandson has taken the wrong path. Even if he was not crippled by someone else, he's still destined to be a good-for-nothing. From this point on, he will have a hard time improving his cultivation."

Like a bolt from the blue, the news struck Ling Yi, making him dumbfounded on the spot.

What did Elder Yu say? Even if Gu Ruoyun did not cripple Ling Xi, he was still a good-for-nothing?

"No!"

"Impossible!"

Lady Shi Yun had said that the secret technique would not have any side effects. This old man must be trying to fool me to protect Gu Ruoyun.

"Do you think that I will believe this just because you say so?" Ling Yi was filled with boiling anger as he bellowed, "I advise you to surrender Gu Ruoyun to me. Or else, don't blame me for not showing mercy! Xi'er is the sole heir of our Ling family, if he's crippled, then that leaves the Ling family without any offspring! That's why I have to let that damned little girl pay the price of

death!"

Roar!

Ling Xi let out a furious howl. However, he neither struck out at Elder Yu, nor did he rush towards Gu Ruoyun who was shielded by Elder Yu behind his back.

Instead, he made for Luo Yin who was among the crowd...

"Damn it!"

Elder Yu's expression turned grave. Just when he was about to move forward, a strong wind blew him off his feet. With a thump, his legs gave way and he fell heavily onto the ground.

At that moment, the wooden staff held tightly by Elder Yu was broken in two with a snap. His aged face was terrifying as he looked on with a ghastly expression at the people from the Weapon Refining Sect who acted as if nothing had happened. He spat out three words, word by word.

"Weapon! Refining! Sect!"

Indeed, the source of the force came from the Weapon Refining Sect.

Who would have thought that the Weapon Refining Sect had the nerve to pull tricks with a crowd of people staring!?

"Fine!"

"It's completely fine!"

"I, Elder Yu, will remember this debt!"

"Luo Yin!"

Seeing Ling Yi gunning for Luo Yin, Gu Ruoyun shouted anxiously.

But Luo Yin had barely reacted when she fell into Ling Xi's hands...

"Hahaha! Gu Ruoyun, you think you are safe with the people

from Hundred Herb Hall guarding you? Alas, you take me too lightly! If you wish for your friend's safety, then you cannot fight back, no matter what I do! Or else, I'll choke the life out of her!"

Ling Yi's hands grabbed tightly around Luo Yin's neck as he said with a fierce and malicious expression, "Gu Ruoyun, don't mind me!"

Luo Yin glared fiercely at Ling Yi and said fearlessly, "Ling Yi, you shameless old thing! It was your grandson who wanted to sign the lease of life and death with Gu Ruoyun. Who can be blamed if he is crippled? After the young one is beaten, then comes the old one. Don't you guys have any f*cking shame?"

"Shut your mouth!"

Ling Yi raised his hand and slapped Luo Yin's face mercilessly. Immediately, five finger marks appeared on her small face.

However, Luo Yin neither cried nor shouted. She licked the blood from the corners of her lips, a sneer flashing in her eyes.

"The lease signed by those two were witnessed by the Cultivators of the Weapon Refining Sect. Don't tell me that you're going to leave them alone?"

As she was saying this, her gaze moved towards the Weapon Refining Sect.

Chapter 73: Sinister Old Man Ling (2)

Although Luo Yin was well informed about the ruthlessness of the Weapon Refining Sect, she had thought that with so many people looking on, even the shameless Weapon Refining Sect ought to be more graceful in their execution.

Sadly, she had underestimated the shamelessness of the Weapon Refining Sect...

"Lease?" Hun Fei glanced at Luo Yin and snorted, "I'm sorry, I only said that the match will end when the winner is obvious. When did I ever mention a lease? Gu Ruoyun went against the rules, so naturally, there will be punishment due. However, we, Weapon Refining Sect do not like to treat human lives like worthless straw, hence we won't meddle in this matter!"

It was not only Luo Yin, even the bystanders, were impressed by the shamelessness of the Weapon Refining Sect after hearing such a speech from them.

However, when they saw Shi Yun knitting her brows beside Hun Fei, they let out a silent sigh.

It seemed that this incident was Hun Fei's own doing and was obviously not Lady Shi Yun's intention. Someone like Lady Shi Yun, who was gentle and kind like a fairy, could never do something so shameless.

"Haha!" Ling Yi laughed boisterously. He was filled with boiling anger as he said fiercely, "Luo Yin, what more do you have to say?"

Luo Yin bit her lip and snorted, "I just didn't think that the Weapon Refining Sect would be so shameless! So, kill me if you like, I have nothing to say! After all, my life isn't worth anything. If you wished to use me to threaten Gu Ruoyun, dream on!"

"Then, you shall see with your own eyes how your good friend is going to be trampled by me! Haha!" Ling Yi laughed angrily while

grasping Luo Yin's neck. "Also, don't even think about killing yourself. In my hands, you cannot die! If you want to die, you'll have to wait until I've taken care of Gu Ruoyun!"

After he finished, he looked at Gu Ruoyun. In his eyes was a furious storm.

"Gu Ruoyun, if you don't want your friend to die, then drop that sword in your hand! Then, come stand in front of me!"

From the start until the end, Gu Ruoyun had not said a word. Her pretty and delicate face was expressionless. Her dry gaze projected towards Ling Yi. "Ling Yi, there are things which you should never do. If you have done it, then you must have the resolve to pay the price!"

"Hmph, don't try to mess with me. If you do not obey my commands, I'll let your friend die here! Put down your sword immediately and stand in front of me! I'll give you three minutes, or else, I can't guarantee your friend's life."

Ling Yi grabbed tightly onto Luo Yin's neck. Seeing that the person within his grip was almost suffocating, an endless enjoyment welled up within him.

"Elder Yu, please hold on to my sword."

Gu Ruoyun waved her palm and tossed her sword to Elder Yu. She then made her way slowly towards Ling Yi. Throughout it all, her pretty and delicate face did not have any unnecessary emotions.

"Big..." Looking at Gu Ruoyun's figure, Elder Yu opened his mouth anxiously, but he swallowed his words. Nervousness filled his eyes.

"Gu Ruoyun, you injured my grandson. Today, I will let you experience what hell is! Don't worry, I won't let you die a quick death. I'll only make you pay a thousand times over for what you did to my grandson. Hahaha!"

Boom!

Ling Yi landed a heavy punch on Gu Ruoyun's chest. She was pushed back by the force, her feet dragging a deep and long shadow on the ground. Her beautiful hair dispersed messily, covering her pale face.

She wiped the blood stain at the corner of her lips, raised her head and looked at Ling Yi.

Although she did not say anything, the scorn in the young lady's eyes was so obvious that Ling Yi could not help but burn with rage.

Chapter 74: Qianbei Ye's Fury (1)

"Gu Ruoyun, even at the doorstep of your death, you're still so arrogant! Today, I will definitely not let you go!"

Boom!

Ling Yi punched her like a dragon, his blow landing mercilessly on Gu Ruoyun's chest. In an instant, the girl spat out a mouthful of fresh blood, staring coldly at Ling Yi who was in a fit of rage.

However, it was exactly this gaze that made Ling Yi grit his teeth in anger. Every punch of his was more powerful than the one before it, making Gu Ruoyun fall backward with every hit.

There were those who could not stomach it and closed their eyes. Nevertheless, the girl's resilience was admirable.

At that moment, Ling Yi, who was completely angered by Gu Ruoyun, did not notice the look his opponent gave Elder Yu.

Elder Yu nodded slightly, signaling his comprehension. Just when he was about to rescue Luo Yin while Ling Yi was completely engrossed with Gu Ruoyun, a stream of red light flashed swiftly from behind and shot towards Gu Ruoyun like lightning.

"Haha! Gu Ruoyun, you should've never, ever hurt my grandson. Now I will send you to hell!"

A powerful energy swirled around Ling Yi's fist. His eyes were burning with rage. He used his full force and lashed out at Gu Ruoyun.

"Gu Ruoyun, never mind me. Run!"

Luo Yin's expression changed as she shouted hastily.

If Gu Ruoyun had died for her, then she would never be able to forgive herself, not in this life...

When she thought of this, she could not help but let anxiousness show in her eyes, mixed with deep self-blame and remorse...

But Gu Ruoyun was now completely exposed to Ling Yi's fists with nowhere to run. When the girl looked like she was about to die tragically under her opponent's attack, a big hand suddenly reached out from her side and forcefully pulled her into an embrace...

"Who dares to rescue this little bastard?!"

Ling Yi was boiling with anger. Who had the gall to rescue this person whom he wanted to kill? They must have been tired of living!

When he turned around to look, he could not help but be amazed.

He had never seen a man as gorgeous as this. In red clothes, he had silver hair and looked like a fairy or a demon. His face was perfection at its best, driving the world mad. However, the man's gaze was fixed upon Gu Ruoyun from the start, heartache showing in his scarlet eyes.

"Who are you?"

Ling Yi quickly snapped out of his amazement. He knitted his brows and said, "Kid, are you trying to be a busybody?"

There was no trace of spiritual energy wavelength on this kid's body. However, Ling Yi did not forget that it was him who rescued Gu Ruoyun from his hands. If it was a coincidence, no one including himself would have believed it.

The man turned his head and looked at Ling Yi. He asked, poker-faced, "Did you do this to Xiao Yun?"

"Hmph!" Ling Yi snorted, "Kid, you better get away from here, or else, I cannot guarantee the life of this girl in my grasp!"

Qianbei Yu did not say a word as she walked silently towards Ling Yi.

Under the light breeze, the silver hair danced in the wind while the red clothing fluttered. There was a certain magical charm

about it.

"Xiao Ye?"

Gu Ruoyun was stunned. She looked at Qianbei Ye, slightly surprised.

With reasons she could not tell, the Xiao Ye now gave her a very unfamiliar feeling, as if he had turned into another person...

"Kid, did you not f*cking hear me? If that's the case, then I'll kill you first!"

Ling Yi charged at Qianbei Ye angrily with a force exceeding the extreme, much stronger than when he was mauling Gu Ruoyun. Obviously, against Qianbei Ye, he did not dare to let his guard down even in the slightest...

Chapter 75: Qianbei Ye's Fury (2)

Boom!

The force of his punch pierced the heavens, like a storm passing through. However, his whole body stiffened in the next moment...

He had put all his strength behind that one punch, but it was single-handedly intercepted by this man?

Indeed, he only used one hand to block his strongest attack.

Suddenly, a fear welled up from within him, emanating throughout Ling Yi's entire body. He looked at the man's gorgeous face after the storm. He opened his mouth but noticed that his throat was seized by a hand and he was unable to make a sound.

"Run!"

Ling Yi took a labored breath. His only option now was to run!

When he thought of this, he wanted to turn and bolt right away. But what frightened him more was behind him...

At that instant, his body felt as if it was bound. He could not move his feet no matter what force he used. It was as if a rope had been tied around his feet...

"How is this possible?"

"How did this man manage to do this?"

While Ling Yi was puzzled by his situation, the man's figure appeared like a phantom in front of him and the hand of death choked mercilessly on his neck...

With the slightest twist...

Crack!

His neck was twisted into a line like fried dough. Then, it let out a soft click and his neck was snapped easily. Fresh blood gushed forth like a fountain, making the bright red garment of the man

even more seductive...

Everybody was stunned. In an instant, endless fear filled everyone's hearts. There were those who could not stand it and outright fainted.

They had seen countless bloody scenes before, but they had never seen a person directly snapping another person's neck, and this man had done just that...

Those, who had thought Qianbei Ye was a powerless person, wanted to slap themselves. If he was not strong enough, who else could be tougher than him?

"How? How is Gu Ruoyun so lucky?"

Gu Panpan was envious to the point of madness. "When I first saw him in the palace, I thought he was only a handsome good-for-nothing! But not only is he gorgeous beyond comparison, he had extraordinary strength. Why would such a man be following Gu Ruoyun around? What right does that woman have? No! I, Gu Panpan, am not inferior to that Gu Ruoyun. Since we were little, she has only been fit to pick up the things that I've rejected. Whatever I have taken a liking to, shall be mine!"

Gu Ruoyun was only fit to pick up the trash that she had rejected, no more!

Right now, other than Gu Panpan, there was another whose heart was also filled with envy.

Obviously, that person was the Lady of the Weapon Refining Sect, Shi Yun.

Even though the color of their eyes was different, Shi Yun had insistently believed that Qianbei Ye was the god-like man whom she had dreamt about. Now, seeing the man whom she had sought after for so many years being so protective of another girl, how could she not be jealous?

Especially when that woman was Gu Ruoyun who made light of

the Weapon Refining Sect...

"Xiao Yun."

Qianbei Ye turned and looked at Gu Ruoyun. When he saw the look of disbelief in the girl's eyes, his heart wrenched. Was he too cruel and had he frightened her?

"Xiao Yun, I'm sorry. I did not lash out so hard on purpose. I was only furious when I saw that he had harmed you. I assure you, I will never be so violent again. I will kill them gently, is that alright?"

As he was saying this, Qianbei Ye clutched the corners of his clothes tightly, looking at Gu Ruoyun with a pleading expression.

What would he do if Xiao Yun did not forgive him? What if she ignores him after this?

"No! Absolutely not!"

When he thought about Gu Ruoyun ignoring him, Qianbei Ye's heart throbbed with pain, as if he had felt this kind of pain before...

Chapter 76: Qianbei Ye's Fury (3)

Gu Ruoyun finally regained her senses and she blinked. "What are you talking about? Why would I be angry? But, Xiao Ye, I never thought that you would have such power after you lost your memories. You even knocked Ling Xi out within a second."

Qianbei Ye looked carefully at Gu Ruoyun. "Xiao Yun, you're... not angry at me?"

"Why would I be angry at you?" Gu Ruoyun looked slightly puzzled as she asked, confused.

Feeling as if he had just gone to heaven after returning from hell, Qianbei Ye hugged Gu Ruoyun excitedly, holding her tightly in his embrace.

Gu Ruoyun was dumbfounded, staying on the spot as though she had just been electrocuted.

Truth be told, she had a certain liking towards Qianbei Ye. She could not explain it herself, but she truly believed that he would not harm her. That trust was also peculiar. Even Gu Ruoyun herself did not fully understand it.

However, this hug had her stunned. Since their acquaintance until now, Xiao Ye had never made such an intimate move before.

"Xiao Yun, thank you. I thought that you were angry because I was too cruel. That's why I was afraid...afraid that you won't talk to me anymore." Qianbei Ye hugged Gu Ruoyun tightly as he continued, "Xiao Yun, I will never let you be harmed again. I will never leave your side, because I don't want to see you bleed. If not, I will hurt here."

Qianbei Ye pointed at his chest, frowning slightly.

"I don't know why, but I was always longing for you. Also, it was your coming here which made me awaken from my slumber. Xiao Yun, do you think that it was fate that brought us together?"

"Fate, huh?"

Gu Ruoyun slowly closed her eyes. In that moment, a cold face appeared in her mind...

That person was the one she had trusted the most! Or else, she would not have entrusted her own brother to his care! But in the end, he had betrayed her for his own greed, and mercilessly amputated Yu'er...

When she thought back on that moment, her heart could not help but throb with pain. That heart-wrenching pain would be hard to forget even after a few lifetimes...

"Fate?"

Suddenly, a soft laugh came from beside them. Gu Ruoyun slowly recovered from her daze and looked at Shi Yun who was walking towards her.

However, Shi Yun's gaze was transfixed on Qianbei Ye.

"Actually, sometimes feelings may deceive you, especially in your case, when you have lost your memories."

If it were fate, then it would be her and him...Gu Ruoyun was but a good-for-nothing! How could she fight hand-to-hand with this man? Besides herself, nobody in the whole Mainland could stand by his side.

Qianbei Ye frowned. He tugged subconsciously on Ruoyun's sleeve as he said with a weak tone, "Little Yun, I don't like seeing too many strangers. Can we go back and rest?"

He could not put a finger on it, but the woman in front of him gave him an uneasy feeling. That feeling made him want to get away from her.

"Alright. I don't like these people as well."

Gu Ruoyun nodded, then she remembered something and made her way slowly to Luo Yin's side. "Luo Yin, I'm sorry. I have

dragged you into my own mess."

Luo Yin shook her head. "I should be the one to say sorry. If it weren't for me, you wouldn't..."

When she thought of that alarmingly dangerous scene, her heart tightened. If Qianbei Ye had not arrived in the nick of time, she would not have forgiven herself for as long as she lived.

"Don't worry, Ling Xi cannot kill me."

Gu Ruoyun smiled. Even if Qianbei Ye did not intervene, she still had her trump card in the form of Zixie. But unless it was a dire situation, she would not let Zixie show himself...

"Hold it!"

Seeing that Gu Ruoyun was about to leave, a voice came from behind them.

Shi Yun smiled gently. "Gu Ruoyun, I actually admire you very much. Not only were you lucky enough to obtain the Crippled Spirit Weapon, you even used it to defeat Ling Xi. Even though your talents were nothing special, you have exceptionally good luck, especially..."

She paused briefly before continuing, "You picked up this man who lost his memories, and filled his mind with the notion that you two were fated, leading him to firmly believe that you were the one he's looking for. However, the truth will prevail eventually. I hope that you take care of yourself."

Chapter 77: Your Majesty (1)

Gu Ruoyun had intended to turn around and leave, but when she heard this, she stopped in her footsteps. She curled the edge of her lips slightly and a smile appeared on the lady's pretty and delicate face.

"It is true that I had picked up Xiao Ye, but I did not ask him to follow me around. Why don't tell me Lady Shi Yun knows Xiao Ye?"

"Lady Gu, I meant no disrespect. However, coincidentally, I have seen this man before, and we were betrothed to each other. Alas, he seemed to not recall that part of his memory. That is why I am reminding Lady Gu, that when you tell too many lies, they will be exposed sooner or later."

Her implication was that she was the one who got acquainted with Qianbei Ye first. However, by some strange chance, Gu Ruoyun had met him, which led to the current situation.

"What does the Lady Shi Yun mean by this? Could it be that the man who killed Ling Yi in a split second was her acquaintance? Only that in this case, the man had lost his memories and mistook Gu Ruoyun for her?"

"That is right. I did not think that Gu Ruoyun could be shameless to this extent, even telling such lies. That is understandable, considering a person like her without drop-dead gorgeous looks that can topple a country, how could she ever match up to such a peerless man?"

"Standing beside Lady Shi Yun, it is like comparing a phoenix to a wild hen! Moreover, who is Lady Shi Yun? She is the successor of the Weapon Refining Sect. She was a peerless genius who achieved the level of Martial King at a young age! How could she ever compare to Lady Shi Yun?"

The crowds murmured and looked at Gu Ruoyun with disdain.

At this moment, nobody had noticed a man below the restaurant. He clutched a feather fan in his hand and laid lazily on a soft chair, surrounded by maids and servant girls, exuding a beautiful and fragrant aura.

Instantly, the man's attractive phoenix eyes gazed upon the lady among the crowd. He then chuckled softly. His laugh ringed beautifully beyond compare, a beauty under the heavens. "She is Gu Shengxiao's good-for-nothing little sister? Interesting, this sister of Gu Shengxiao is indeed interesting. She has this rare talent, and yet she was taken for a good-for-nothing."

Tsk tsk, if such a talented person is taken for a good-for-nothing, then there would not be any geniuses on the face of the earth.

It is a general knowledge that a cultivator will find it increasingly difficult to level-up during the more advanced stages of their cultivation. There were some bottlenecks encountered where people could never overcome ever in their whole life. However, there are those with a certain talent who can surpass all the bottlenecks. Her early breakthroughs will not be as smooth as other geniuses, but as she proceeds to a higher level, her talent will be quick to manifest itself...

That kind of genius refers to people who possess a Spiritual Ocean vaster than anyone else on the face of the earth.

It was clear that Gu Ruoyun was such a person with that kind of talent...

A gleam flashed in his eyes. The man smiled silently, "The only person on this earth who can impress me is Gu Shengxiao. I wonder what kind of person can his younger sister prove to be? It seems that I have not traveled to the Azure Dragon Country in vain this time."

When he thought of this, his smile widened, "Qing Yi, go and

investigate everything about Gu Ruoyun."

"Yes, Your Majesty!"

The girl named Qing Yi wielded her sword and bowed. Then she retreated and left...

...

Outside the Hundred Herb Hall, Gu Ruoyun did not say a word. Her indifferent expression seemed to outright ignore the other party.

It was at this moment when an untimely voice interjected.

"Gu Ruoyun, I did not think that you would be so despicable!" Gu Panpan glared with her round eyes as she spoke with a dignified air. She made Gu Ruoyun look like a demon whom everyone would slay, "Thank goodness grandpa had the foresight to banish you from the family! If not, would you not have humiliated the Gu family's reputation?"

However, her voice had barely faded when a scornful snort came from the corner.

"Oh? The Gu family still has a reputation? Hehe, that's a first."

Luo Yin jeered, "Gu Panpan, this is no place for you to interrupt. You had better keep your mouth shut. If you make me angry, I will stab you to death with a cucumber!"

"You... You..."

Gu Panpan flushed red with anger. She spat out three words through gritted teeth.

"You shameless thing!"

Chapter 78: Your Majesty (2)

"Tsk tsk, indeed I am shameless, but I am still better than some Holy Mother White Lotus! However, with your level of intelligence, Gu Panpan, you are not even fit to be one of those Holy Mother White Lotus."

Luo Yin sneered while looking towards Shi Yun. Her freckles seemed to take on a look of scorn and disdain. Her gaze was full of disgust, as if Shi Yun, who was clad in snow-white clothes was dirty.

Shi Yun's eyes darkened slightly, but to her, Luo Yin was nothing but a clown. Killing her would defile her own sword...

Besides, there would be somebody who will teach her a lesson.

Obviously, Gu Panpan was that kind of person. She was furiously angered by Luo Yin. She pounced towards Luo Yin like a furious lion cub, brandishing its claws.

Bam!

Luo Yin raised her foot and sent Gu Panpan flying with a kick. She took out a handkerchief and wiped the base of her shoe, saying with regret, "Although I have just kicked her with my foot, it seems that I cannot hold on to these shoes anymore! To lose my shoes for this one single kick, it is a loss! It's a f*cking loss!"

"You..."

Gu Panpan almost fainted from anger. She gritted her teeth tightly and spat out three words with all her might, "You are shameless!"

Seeing Luo Yin's heartbroken expression, Gu Ruoyun laughed hysterically, "With your family's fortune, buying a pair of shoes is as easy as eating a mouthful of rice."

"That is true, but this little slut isn't even worth a copper. Even if

we sold her, we can't afford to buy these shoes of mine." Luo Yin shook her head and sighed, her eyes full of distress.

With that, even if Gu Panpan had a thicker face, she simply could not take any more insult. She chose to faint.

"Wait!"

Seeing that Gu Ruoyun was about to leave again, Shi Yun's eyes darkened as she said, "You plan to leave, just like that?"

Her steps stopped slightly. Gu Ruoyun had her back facing Shi Yun, and her tone turned cold and dry, but it was as sharp as a sword.

"Can you stop me?"

After saying that, she did not linger anymore. She walked slowly into the Hundred Herb Hall, seemingly vanishing in Shi Yun's pair of increasingly cold eyes...

Shi Yun balled her pink fists tightly, then slowly released them. She trained her pair of beautiful eyes at Qianbei Ye, who was about to follow Gu Ruoyun. There was sadness in her eyes.

"Have you truly forgotten about me?"

She could not believe, could not believe that this man had forgotten her.

If it were not for their marriage in a previous life, she would not have dreamt about him. Even though they did not interact much in the dream, but in the dream world, this man's sword-wielding fighting figure had moved her soul. This made her believe that this man was her one true love.

Hence, no matter how wonderful the suitor, she was not impressed.

She had persisted to this day, for him to finally make an appearance.

Sadly, he did appear, but did not seem to recognize her...

If their fates were not intertwined, why would this peerlessly gorgeous man appear in her dream?

Moreover, Shi Yun had always been a strong believer in previous and present lives!

"Your gaze is disgusting!" A loathsome look flashed across Qianbei Ye's eyes, "It is like you are attempting to rip all my clothes off! You are not Xiao Yun. Other than Xiao Yun, I do not wish for anybody else to look at me."

He could not explain it, but ever since the very first time seeing Shi Yun, it had made Qianbei Ye's uncomfortable to the point where he felt his appetite ruined whenever she was within close proximity.

How uncomfortable!

"Xiao Ye..."

Listening to Qianbei Ye's words, Shi Yun felt a sudden pang of pain in her heart. She wanted to say something, but a powerful killing intent had locked onto her in an instant. That instant, she felt like she had descended into hell, her body felt icy cold.

The breath of death surrounded Shi Yun, making her face turn pale. Her shocked gaze stared at the peerlessly beautiful but somewhat evil face.

"You do not deserve this name!"

Cold...

Shi Yun felt ice-cold all over, her mouth gaped open in silence. She could not utter a single word.

Chapter 79: The Crown Prince Visits (1)

In this very moment, the air around Qianbei Ye turned violent, and he could not contain the irritation that was raging inside of him... However, other than Shi Yun who was under his killing intent, nobody else had felt this. Others felt puzzled by the rapid change in the color of Shi Yun's face.

"Xiao Ye, what are you doing outside? Come in, quick."

At that moment, a voice sounded from within the building. Miraculously, all his killing intent vanished instantly. The raging force in the sky calmed down, causing Shi Yun confusion and made her wonder if all that she had experienced earlier was simply a figment of her own imagination...

Little did she know, that it was Gu Ruoyun's words that had saved her life...

Her whole body relaxed and her limp body collapsed on the ground. Her back was wet with sweat and she was panting heavily.

"Xiao Yun, here I come."

Now that Qianbei Ye had received the order from Gu Ruoyun, he did not spare Shi Yun another glance and went straight into the building. Compared to the dark evil just a few moments ago, this man is tamer than a rabbit. He did not look like a killer in any way possible.

"My Lady, you..." Hun Fei looked at Shi Yun and asked in astonishment, "What happened to you?"

"Nothing," Shi Yun shook her head. She wiped the sweat from her brow, gritted her teeth and said, "Elder Hun Fei, let us go."

As she said this, she gave a last glance at the direction in which Qianbei Ye had left. Her heart throbbed with pain once more.

Qianbei Ye, have you truly been so thoroughly brainwashed? But

I cannot accept this, I cannot accept that you, who belong to me will pull another person into your embrace! That is why I must make you regain your memories and make you kill Gu Ruoyun with your own hands!

...

In the backyard, Zixie looked at the girl in front of him. He raised his brows slightly, "Girl, how do you feel?"

"Strange," Gu Ruoyun's delicate brows knitted together, "Just now, when I was under Ling Yi's attack, I could convert and absorb the force from his punch into my own body. If I could have been hit a few more times, I reckon that I will be able to break through until the seventh level of the Qi Collection ranks."

Zixie smiled, "Your soul and body were forged by the Ancient Divine Pagoda, that is why they are stronger than the average person. However, you must remember not to push yourself when faced with a true Cultivator. That is because a true master can still crush you in an instant. It will not be as simple as merely sustaining injuries!"

From the beginning, Zixie had wanted to train her. That is why he did not lend her his strength because too much help would not have been good for her...

Besides...

Zixie squinted his eyes slightly, "Girl, that woman named Shi Yun, you had better keep an eye on her."

"Shi Yun?" Gu Ruoyun looked at Zixie, puzzled, "You know her?"

"No!" Zixie shook his head, "I could feel that she is very dangerous, so I ask that you do not fight her for the time being! Of course, with your talent, you could surpass her within five years. But now is not the time."

Some things still could not be revealed to Gu Ruoyun.

However, why did that woman's body have his smell? Could it be that Shi Yun has ties with that person?

When he thought of this, Zixie's heart dropped lightly. He gazed at Gu Ruoyun with a hint mixed feelings...

"Girl, I really hope that you can grow faster. Not only your strength, but also..."

He scanned through her whole figure with an evil gaze. The man's lips curled into a devious smile, noble and dignified, enough to drive people mad.

However...

Gu Ruoyun only glared and looked sternly into his eyes, "Put away your evil gaze. I am not interested in you."

Chapter 80: The Crown Prince Visits (2)

"Then, who are you interested in?" Zixie curled his lips into half a smile. "Qianbei Ye? I've told you before, that guy is not a decent person, so you'd better stay away from him."

"Zixie." Gu Ruoyun's smile faded bit by bit. Her pretty and delicate face was wrapped in the afterglow of the setting sun. "I didn't know him for very long, but I was the first person that he met. Now that he's lost all his memories, no matter what mistake he made in the past, he cannot remember them now."

"I don't care if he's a god or a demon. Even though he had easily ended a person's life just now, he did it to protect me. I believe that his protectiveness of me does not contain any impure thoughts. It's likely because I'm the only one who he knows here! That's right, I don't know him well enough, I don't even know about his past, I have even been betrayed and hurt before! But this does not mean that I will never believe in anyone ever again. No matter if it's Xiao Ye, Luo Yin, you, or that big brother of mine whom I have never met, if any of you are in trouble, I won't sit idly."

Perhaps in the past, Qianbei Ye had committed a grave mistake. However, today he was but an innocent child to her. It was true that his memories were sealed. A person who had lost all his memories would naturally take the first person he sees as his mother.

It was also precisely because Xiao Ye had no memories that Gu Ruoyun believed in him. Or else, she would not have gotten close to this man...

"Zixie, I have failed to protect my mother before. I couldn't even protect my little brother whom I love. In this life, I will not make the same mistakes. It's because I have lost them once that I now cherish the people around me even more."

The maiden lifted her face. A determined glow appeared on her

beautiful and delicate face which had the innocence of a child.

That glow seemed to have moved Zixie's heart. A hint of a smile appeared in his eyes. Just when he was about to speak, a stern look flashed across his purple eyes.

"Someone's coming."

His voice had barely faded when he turned into a purple glow and disappeared from the backyard...

Gu Ruoyun arched her eyebrows slightly. She raised her head and saw that Elder Yu was walking towards her with hurried footsteps.

"My Lady, Leng Yanfeng has come. He wants to see you. Look at this..."

"Leng Yanfeng?" Gu Ruoyun was stunned. "The Crown Prince of Azure Dragon Country, the disciple of the Weapon Refining Sect? What does he want from me?"

"I am not sure." Elder Yu shook his head. "My Lady, will you see him? If you do not wish to, I'll go and decline."

"No need," Gu Ruoyun snorted, "I would like to see what business does this Leng Yanfeng have with me! We don't have the slightest of ties, so what does he want from me now?"

...

At that moment, in the Hundred Herb Hall, Leng Yanfeng raised his teacup and sipped some tea. His face was as cold as an iceberg. Even when he saw Elder Yu bringing Gu Ruoyun forward, his pair of cold eyes did not change in the slightest.

"I am only a nobody. I wonder what business does Your Royal Highness have with me? Could it be that Your Royal Highness was thirsty and there was no good tea in your abode, that's why you came here to look for me on the pretense of a cup of tea?"

It was common knowledge that the teas of Hundred Herb Hall were all rare medicinal tea. If anybody else was insulted as such by

Gu Ruoyun, they would have been angered. But not Leng Yanfeng. His expression did not change, his handsome face cold.

Chapter 81: The Crown Prince Visits (3)

"Gu Ruoyun, you like me."

It was not a question, but a statement.

Gu Ruoyun could not help but be flabbergasted. This man surely thinks too highly of himself. She... Likes him? How did she herself not know about this?

"So..." Leng Yanfeng paused briefly, "Tomorrow, you move into the Prince's House."

The tone of the instruction made Gu Ruoyun smile. "You want me to move into the Prince House? As a wife, or as a concubine? Leng Yanfeng, you despise me. Why would you want me to move into the Prince House?"

Gu Ruoyun was not an idiot. Leng Yanfeng loathed her. If that were the case, why would he want to fetch her into his quarters?

Leng Yanfeng replied coldly, "For junior Shi Yun!"

"Shi Yun? You want me to surrender myself and dedicate my Spiritual Energy to Shi Yun? I'm sorry, Leng Yanfeng, I am not that stupid. I won't go dig my own grave!"

When a Martial Warrior lost his Spiritual Energy, he would turn into an idiot. What difference was there between that and death?

When he heard this, Leng Yanfeng frowned. "I don't know what you mean by that. Why would junior Shi Yun take your Spiritual Energy? I admit, you are much more different than before. I do not despise you as much as I have. However, in my heart, junior Shi Yun is my one and only. If you left that silver-haired man, junior Shi Yun would not be in this much pain! You have liked me ever since you were little. If that's the case, then I'll accede to your wish, and I will take you as my wife! On the condition is that you may never meet with that man ever again! Other than the wedding night, I will not touch you at any time!"

He will never forget that when his mother was framed to death and he himself was about to be assassinated, it was that white-clothed fairy maiden who had saved him.

For her, he had trained hard. Not only did he gain the trust of his father, the emperor, he had even gotten into the Weapon Refining Sect, which he had dreamt about, and met his heart's fairy maiden...

However, he understood that a fair maiden was sacred and inviolable. He could only watch from a distance behind her.

Of course, for him, this was enough.

All these years, there had been no shortage of suitors around Shi Yun, but she had turned all of them down. He had once thought that she was simple ascetic. But he now understood that she had chosen to stay single to wait for this man. Unfortunately, this man had another lady in his eyes...

The fair maiden of his heart was so kind and wonderful that she would never hurt the person she loves for her own happiness. Junior Shi Yun could never do such a thing.

Hence, with no other choice, he was willing to exchange his life for her smile.

"Tsk tsk. It seems that I have arrived in the nick of time. I hear that the Crown Prince of the country is wantonly harming a woman for another woman. Remember, women should be loved, not harmed, especially a woman with such pleasing looks as this."

The voice was evil. One could immediately tell what kind of person he is.

A horde of peerless handmaidens entered first. Then, a soft chair in a peach color floated in from the outside. Gu Ruoyun immediately felt a chill all over her body.

She had never thought that there would be any living man who would wear a cheesy color such as peach. Not even girls would suit

that color. However, when Gu Ruoyun saw that face, she suddenly realized that there was somebody who could match the color peach.

The man's seductive face was truly androgynous. His soul-pulling phoenix eyes slanted upwards slightly. With a perfect face, fair skin, and that fine collarbone, every part of him was testing everyone's self-control.

Chapter 82: The Crown Prince Visits (4)

If it were not for his prominent Adam's Apple, Gu Ruoyun would have taken him for a woman.

He was too bewitching!

It was a shame that a person like this should be a man. If it were not so, one could make a fortune by selling this person to a brothel.

If Zuo Shangchen knew Gu Ruoyun's thoughts, he would have had the urge to kill. This woman wanted to sell him to a brothel? Which brothel would dare to take him?

"Zuo Shangchen, why aren't you acting as the Fourth Prince of Vermillion Bird Country? What are you doing here?" Leng Yanfeng's eyes darkened slightly as he said coldly, "And my actions are none of your business!"

"What does Your Royal Highness mean? Do I need your permission to go anywhere?" Zuo Shangchen gave a smile that could topple countries, then threw a wink at Gu Ruoyun. "Woman, Leng Yanfeng's standards are a bit odd. He wouldn't have taken a liking towards the fake and disgusting Shi Yun otherwise. Don't follow him. Why don't you follow me? I guarantee that you can dine on the finest foods and sip on the finest drinks!"

Gu Ruoyun looked at Zuo Shangchen. "I'm sorry. I have no interest in a man who looks like a woman. The way I see it, you're more suited to be in love with a man and I won't be the third wheel."

Zuo Shangchen's expression immediately turned grave.

In an instant, the handmaidens around him all looked at Gu Ruoyun with sympathy.

His Majesty's biggest taboo was for people to say that he looked like a woman. Once, there was a person who jested about him so, and in the end, he was cut into pieces on the spot. From then on,

nobody dared to say such words ever again.

However, Zuo Shangchen took a deep breath. He suppressed his inner anger and smiled benevolently. "Woman, I am trying to help you."

If she were not Gu Shengxiao's little sister, she would have died a hundred and eight thousand times just because of what she said just now. She was lucky to have a genius for a brother. If he had so much as touch a hair of that man's little sister, that man would have rushed back immediately to cut him down.

"I'm sorry, I don't know you, and I don't need your help," Gu Ruoyun touched the tip of her nose and said in an indifferent tone.

Zuo Shangchen was stunned. Was this woman truly the cute and gentle little sister as described by Gu Shengxiao? Which part of her was cute? Which part of her was gentle? She clearly was a person who was hard to approach.

Of course, what Zuo Shangchen did not know was that in every brother's eyes, their little sisters were all cute and kind, especially in the case of Gu Shengxiao who had a sister complex...

When he thought about Gu Shengxiao's expression when describing this girl, Zuo Shangchen could not help but laugh hysterically and shook his head. "Woman, you are truly a little porcupine. Your whole body is covered with sharp spines, making it hard for others to approach you. I am no bad person, you don't have to be so guarded with me."

Gu Ruoyun scanned Zuo Shangchen, her clear eyes sensing some peculiarity. "Is that so? Then, why do I see 'I'm a bad person' written all over your body?"

Zuo Shangchen was immediately silenced. Which part of him resembled a bad person?

The exchange between the two as if no one else were there had utterly angered Leng Yanfeng. However, no matter how angry he

was, his handsome face still maintained its usual coldness.

"Zuo Shangchen, Gu Ruoyun has always admired me. This is common knowledge. Then, let me fulfill her wish, giving her a name and a night's cuddle. I am being fair to her, so you don't have to meddle."

Zuo Shangchen's smile gradually waned, his eyes showing scorn. Gu Shengxiao's beloved little sister was only fit to be named Crown Prince's concubine? If she had only asked, that man would have torn down the whole world to give it to her as a present.

This Leng Yanfeng was, at most, a disciple of the Weapon Refining Sect. He was too full of himself...

Gu Shengxiao's true identity was only known by Shi Yun and a few core elders in the Weapon Refining Sect. Leng Yanfeng would never have known about all this. Or else, he would not have said those words...

Chapter 83: Life Comes From Dongfang (1)

"And..."

Leng Yanfeng's voice paused, his already cold eyes growing frostier, "I won't allow anyone insult junior Shi Yun!"

"Haha!"

Zuo Shangchen laughed madly. His phoenix eyes slanted upwards slightly. His eyes were full of scornful humor.

"You want to defend your junior Shi Yun, that's your problem, none of my business. But, you may not touch this girl! Don't say that I didn't warn you. If you touch her, there is one person who'll never forgive you!"

Gu Ruoyun was astonished. She looked at Zuo Shangchen, slightly puzzled. What did he mean by that?

"Hmph!" Leng Yanfeng snorted. He rolled up his sleeves and stood up. His cold face had on a very sour expression.

"Zuo Shangchen, we don't need you to stick your nose into our Azure Dragon Country's business! Also, we, Azure Dragon Country and the Vermillion Bird Country are not on good terms. What business do you have with your reckless visit?"

Zuo Shangchen pouted. Surely he could not say that his coming here was purely out of curiosity about Gu Shengxiao's beloved little sister? If that man knew that he had sneaked his way here, he would immediately rush over to cut him down.

When he thought of this, he squinted his eyes slightly and smiled charmingly.

"Don't you worry Your Royal Highness. I will pay His Majesty, the Emperor of Azure Dragon Country, a visit in due time."

At that moment, Leng Yanfeng was shooting out an endless stream of cold air. His ice-like eyes looked at Zuo Shangchen's evil

face and he said, poker-faced, "Then, I will look forward to your arrival at the royal palace!"

When he finished saying this, he gave Gu Ruoyun one last glance.

"Gu Ruoyun, if junior Shi Yun fancies that man, then nobody on the planet can fight with a lady as lovely as she. Becoming my concubine is your only choice. Think about it carefully. I look forward to our answer."

When he finished, he did not waste any more words. He waved his sleeve and left, leaving behind an ice-cold silence.

"Tsk tsk, Little Yun'er, I didn't think that your standards would be so low. You fancy Leng Yanfeng, a man with no morals and no looks?" Zuo Shangchen curled his lips into a smile. He had completely forgotten that Gu Ruoyun had only met him for the first time.

That was why, upon hearing the words "Little Yun'er", she could not help but shiver, her whole body feeling cold.

"Do I know you?"

She rubbed the tip of her nose, slightly speechless as she asked.

"You don't know me before, but you'll know me after," Zuo Shangchen put on a country-toppling smile, his winks like flowing waves. "But I have long heard of your name."

He was implying that he had learned of her existence from Gu Shengxiao.

However, Gu Ruoyun had misunderstood him.

"Oh?" Gu Ruoyun raised the corners of her lips and said disapprovingly, "It seems that my reputation has spread far and wide. This good-for-nothing name has already traveled to the Vermillion Bird Country."

At that moment, the corners of Zuo Shangchen's eyes twitched strongly and he chuckled, "Before this, you were indeed a good-for-

nothing. But after your battle with that kid today, I don't think anybody will call you by that name again. Although your talents are not those of a genius, for the average person, it's not bad."

"What if I'm a good-for-nothing? What if I'm a genius? No matter what the people call me, it's none of their business. I don't have to prove myself."

The girl's voice brought with it a vicissitude of seeing through the antics of this world. It made Zuo Shangchen unconsciously open his mouth in shock. Suddenly, he remembered the message discovered by Qing Yi, and his phoenix eyes abruptly turned cold.

He never thought that after Shengxiao had left the Gu family, this girl had almost died once. After going through that ordeal, she had no choice but to grow up...

Sadly, Gu Shengxiao was now cultivating in seclusion. He could not convey the message to him. Or else, judging by his character, he would have rushed over immediately and wiped out the Gu family.

Chapter 84: Life Comes From Dongfang (2)

"By the way, aren't you supposed to leave now?" Gu Ruoyun raised her eyebrows slightly and looked at Zuo Shangchen with half a smile. "Or do you need me to escort you out?"

Zuo Shangchen's gaze was a bit sad. "Little girl, I have helped you. Is this how you treat someone who has helped you?"

"Then, what do you want?"

"Erm," Zuo Shangchen caressed his chin lightly with his finger, his body sprawled out on the lazy chair. He winked at Gu Ruoyun with a charming smile. "I don't want much. Seeing that I have helped you just now, how about you give me a hug?"

"Alright."

Gu Ruoyun smiled. Her pretty and delicate face was generous with smiles.

Then, she paused briefly before saying, "Shopkeeper Zhao, go and give him a hug."

In an instant, Zuo Shangchen's expression turned sour. Did this girl not know that he was a neat freak? Usually, he would not let anybody near his body, not even his servant girls. Of course, that kid Gu Shengxiao was an exception. He was joking with his previous sentence, but he did not expect her to take his word for it, and now she wanted a bad old man to hug him...

Seeing Shopkeeper Zhao walking towards him, Zuo Shangchen was disgusted and almost had goosebumps. Especially that smile on that sunflower face...in his eyes, it was as evil as the big bad wolf grinning at the little white rabbit.

At that moment, his peerless servant girls took out their long swords at the same time. They all pointed their swords at Shopkeeper Zhao who was walking towards Zuo Shangchen. Their eyes had a cold glow like the swords in their hands as if they could

kill a person in an instant...

Shopkeeper Zhao hesitantly looked at Gu Ruoyun, while Gu Ruoyun's smile grew even more prominent.

"Your Highness, the Fourth Prince, didn't you ask for a hug? I'm giving you one, what is with this attitude of yours?"

Zuo Shangchen opened his fan and smiled. "Little girl, this time I'll admit defeat. However, I did not expect you to still have ties to the Dongfang family. From what I gathered, the Hundred Herb Hall belonged to Dongfang Shaoze, and not long ago, Dongfang Shaoze seemed to have given Hundred Herb Hall over to another person. From the looks of it, that person is you!"

He did not leave out the part where the shopkeeper of Hundred Herb Hall answered to Gu Ruoyun.

Looks like the rumors were largely untrue. Gu Ruoyun did not join Hundred Herb Hall out of luck in obtaining Shopkeeper Zhao's mercy, but the Hundred Herb Hall was indeed hers!

When he thought of this, Zuo Shangchen squinted slightly. He raised his lips into a smile. "You have too many secrets. I have the urge to reveal them all."

"Then, you're bound to be disappointed," Gu Ruoyun snorted, "Shopkeeper Zhao, show our guests the way out."

When he heard Gu Ruoyun's order for the guests to leave, Zuo Shangchen smiled lazily. "Xiao Yun'er, one day, I will dig out all your secrets."

Then, he spoke to his servant girls beside him, "Let's go."

"Yes, Your Majesty."

The servant girls held their swords in salute. They quickly lifted the soft chair up, turned and walked towards the door.

The moment they turned in the other direction, the lazy smile on Zuo Shangchen's lips gradually disappeared. He slowly closed his

eyes and went into deep thought.

Life comes from Dongfang? Could it be that the person who would change his fate was truly at Dongfang? But his Master was a reputable person; surely he would not deceive him.

When he thought of this, Zuo Shangchen's face took on a wry smile...

"The person who would change my fate and the genius that master observed are at Dongfang. The only thing is that this Azure Dragon Country is so big. I wonder which one of these people is the one I'm looking for..."

Chapter 85: Life Comes From Dongfang (3)

At that moment, in the Weapon Refining Sect's quarters, Hun Fei's face was ghastly pale. Shi Yun, who was sitting beside him seemed to be in a daze, her brows knitted tightly together, deep in thought.

"My Lady, don't you worry. We will catch Gu Ruoyun, and devote her Spiritual Energy to you!" He balled his fists tightly and said through gritted teeth, "I won't be happy until I kill that little vermin!"

Shi Yun's gaze darkened. She slowly put down her teacup and said, "Hun Fei, don't make any rash actions. If the Three Great Authorities find out, we will get the whole Weapon Refining Sect in trouble."

"My Lady, then what should we do? Surely, we can't let her roam free any longer?"

"No!" Shi Yun shook her head. A dash of cruelty flashed across her eyes. She laughed softly,

"Killing her is not impossible, seeing that the rules set by the Three Great Authorities forbid us from picking on weaklings. But once she breaks through to the level of Martial General, then she would be out of that range. The only thing is that her breakthrough to the level of Martial General could easily take ten years. I cannot wait that long..."

"Also...I don't want to let Gu Ruoyun die!" Shi Yun's smile had a trace of mischief. "I want to absorb all her Spiritual Energy, and then cripple her body and torture her for as long as she lives! Since she chose to deceive Qianbei Ye with her words and made Qianbei Ye so dependent on her, then she...must pay with her life!"

Looking at Shi Yun now, Hun Fei's heart shuddered.

Shi Yun had appeared as gentle as a breeze in front of others. But

nobody knew better than him about the true colors of this woman!

In the beginning, to obtain her utmost highest position within the Weapon Refining Sect, she had resorted to poison her twin older sister, that girl who had her same looks, but was truly kind and extraordinarily talented...

However, all of this happened with his help.

But if she could even harm her own twin sister, what else could she not do?

"My Lady, do you have any other good plan?" Hun Fei frowned. "Is there a way to avoid the eyes of the Three Great Authorities on the Mainland and snatch Gu Ruoyun away without anyone noticing?"

Shi Yun snorted, "Why do we need to avoid their eyes? Leng Yanfeng is one of my people in the Weapon Refining Sect. If he marries Gu Ruoyun, then Gu Ruoyun would belong to the Weapon Refining Sect. The Three Great Authorities wouldn't even bat an eyelid if we were to kill or flay her. I have already implied that I want Gu Ruoyun to leave Qianbei Ye. Leng Yanfeng is a clever man who is engrossed with me. He will certainly go into boiling water and walk on fire for me! Why should I not utilize a person such as this? If this works out, Gu Ruoyun will have to thank me. If it were only by her talent and potential, she wouldn't be a fitting bride for Leng Yanfeng even after a lifetime!"

Even if Leng Yanfeng was not a member of the Weapon Refining Sect, that woman would still not be a fitting bride for him! After all, he was the crown prince of a country.

Hun Fei's jaws dropped in astonishment. He had thought that he himself was cruel enough.

However, Lady Shi Yun was clearly crueler! To achieve her goals, she would do absolutely anything!

While Shi Yun was plotting against Gu Ruoyun, the Emperor of

Azure Dragon Country was faced with a storm.

There was no other reason. General Luo was the most protective father towards his own daughter in the whole Azure Dragon Country. Hence, when he got word that Luo Yin was taken hostage by Ling Yi, he immediately burst out in rage. He brought a troop of men to capture the crippled Ling Xi and even demolished the mourning hall set up for Ling Yi.

Chapter 86: Life Comes From Dongfang (4)

The womenfolk of the Ling family were wailing for their parents. The originally glorious Ling family had turned into such a sorry state overnight. It truly made one sigh.

"The Imperial Concubine! Quick, we have to find the Imperial Concubine!"

The one who said this was Ling Yi's younger brother, who was also Ling Xi's second granduncle Ling Yihui. Now that Ling Yi was dead, he had become the head of the Ling family. But just when he was about to go and ask for the Imperial Concubine's help, a black-robed girl appeared in front of the Ling family with a decree in hand.

"Our Majesty's decree: the Ling family shall leave today's matter as it is. They shall not trouble Gu Ruoyun and the Luo family, or else, they would have to accept the consequences!"

After seeing the decree in the black-robed girl's hands, Ling Yihui kept quiet...

Because he was completely stunned!

Good heavens, a hunt order from the Dark Yin Palace? Could it be that this black-robed girl was a member of the Dark Yin Palace?

In the Mainland, you might not know about the names of the four countries, you might also not know the surname of the Weapon Refining Sect's supreme leader, but there was no one who did not know about the Dark Yin Palace.

The collective power of the Dark Yin Palace might not be as formidable as the Weapon Refining Sect, but because the Dark Yin Palace was a nursery for assassins, and they accepted jobs to assassinate people in the outside world, they were widely known.

The Dark Yin Palace would give a hunt order before killing a person. There was never a person whom they could not kill after

they had decided to hunt them down. More importantly, until today, nobody knew where the Dark Yin Palace was located.

That was why the people of the Mainland would be wary at the sound of the name "Dark Yin Palace".

He did not expect the Luo family to know people from the Dark Yin Palace.

Indeed, in Ling Yihui's mind, the Luo family had dared to snatch a person away so brazenly all because of Dark Yin Palace as their backer! As for Gu Ruoyun, he had completely overlooked her...

As a little girl who had not finished growing, how could she know of the Majesty of the Dark Yin Palace? It was impossible!

"Second Granduncle, you cannot listen to her!" Ling Yu's expression changed abruptly and she said with blood red eyes, "You must go find my aunt to avenge Grandpa and Big Brother!"

Qing Yi looked at Ling Yu coldly. That one look was like a sharp sword piercing one's heart. It made Ling Yu's heart shudder, and she did not dare to speak again.

"Young lady, don't worry," Ling Yihui gaze turned and said flatteringly, "The death of my big brother had nothing to do with them. He asked for that, so I will not bear a grudge against them!"

"Whoever understands the times is wise. I will return and report to His Majesty."

The black robed girl raised the sword in her hand and said coldly, "I take my leave!"

She did not even give Ling Yihui a chance to react when she turned and left. Looking at her departing back, Ling Yihui's body was covered in cold sweat.

As if she did not understand Ling Yihui's decision, Ling Yu's face was a look of despair...

No!

She could not allow Gu Ruoyun and the Luo family to be free and unfettered! If Second Granduncle was not willing to fight for Grandpa, then she would personally enter the palace to meet the concubine. Or else, the concubine, who lived deep inside the palace in a big hall, would never know the happenings of the outside world...

When she thought of this, a dash of cruelty flashed within her eyes.

She thought to herself, "Gu Ruoyun, Luo Yin, just you wait! I, Ling Yu will not let you be free and unfettered! Paying a blood debt with blood is the unalterable principle! You must go repent in hell for this!"

Chapter 87: The Taming of the Ghost Doctor

(1)

"Level seven in the Qi Cultivation ranks."

Huu.

Within the courtyard, Gu Ruoyun exhaled, ridding her body of impure air as she slowly opened her eyes. Suddenly, Elder Yu's frantic voice rang from the front of the Hundred Herb Hall, "My Lady, someone is looking for you! He's just outside the door."

"Looking for me?" Gu Ruoyun raised her eyebrows, "Who?"

"He's told me that his surname is Liu, and that he sold his ancestral home to you, my Lady."

Upon hearing this, Gu Ruoyun stood up immediately. Her delicate face held a trace of a smile, "It looks like the Ghost Doctor is here. Let's go, Elder Yu. Bring me to him."

Gu Ruoyun was honestly very interested in the Ghost Doctor's medical skills. If she could entice him into joining her Devil Sect, then they would not need to worry about finding ways to earn money anymore.

If the Ghost Doctor should ever find out about what Gu Ruoyun was thinking, he would most likely rush right over to destroy her. The girl wanted to use the Ghost Doctor, whose very name struck terror into the hearts of the people, as a money-making tool?

What an insult!

Mister Liu was already anxiously waiting outside the door. Upon seeing Gu Ruoyun on her way over, his eyes lit up. He greeted her respectfully, "Lady Gu, the Ghost Doctor is already here. However, I can't say if she's willing to let you watch her work, my Lady."

"Don't worry, even if she does not allow me to go near, I won't blame you. Let's go now."

Gu Ruoyun said with a smile.

However, after overhearing their exchange, Elder Yu hurriedly spoke up, "You're going to meet the Ghost Doctor? I'll go with you. I've heard that the Ghost Doctor is rather unreasonable and has an eccentric personality. The Ghost Doctor is skilled at medicine but is also doubly skilled with poisons. It's not too safe for you to go alone."

Gu Ruoyun waved her hands dismissively, "Don't worry, Elder Yu. I know my limits. Mister Liu, if it's not too much trouble, please take me to her."

"Okay. Please follow me, Lady Gu."

Mister Liu gestured respectfully into his home...

...

In the Liu household.

A girl was gently tasting her tea in the main hall. Her movements were slow, graceful and extremely elegant.

She was dressed in an extremely seductive red robe, her alluring figure would send any man's blood pumping. However, upon seeing that face, their hot, pumping blood would instantly come to a stop...

The reason was not that the girl's face was extremely ugly, but because there were countless scars on one-half of her face. You could even see the bits of flesh that had been turned inside out. The scars ran up from her chin, to the corner of her eyes, completely destroying her beauty.

As she heard the sound of footsteps coming from the front of the house, the girl's elegant eyebrows were knitted together. She raised her sharp chin and turned to look. Upon seeing Mister Liu, who was extremely late, her tone carried obvious impatience. However, no matter how much impatience she showed, it could not cover her natural charm.

"You really took your time there. I, the Ghost Doctor, am treating this patient out of my own goodwill, and you've actually made me wait for you?"

Mister Liu wiped away his cold sweat, smiled and spoke flatteringly, "O Honorable Ghost Doctor, please forgive your humble servant for arriving late. I'd like to introduce someone to you, honorable doctor. This is Gu Ruoyun from the Hundred Herb Hall. She wants to observe out of great respect for your excellent skills."

The Ghost Doctor's gaze swept across Gu Ruoyun's pretty face. A trace of mockery hung on her bright red lips, "No one is allowed to come near while I'm treating patients, especially someone who's trying to steal my skills! On account of your young age, little girl, I'll let you leave with your life. Hurry up and get out! Based on your aptitude, you're not qualified to become my disciple, at all."

The Ghost Doctor may not have strong powers, but she was brilliant in medicine. She could even bring a person, who was already at death's door, back into life. Because of that, even organizations such as the Dongfang family and the Weapon Refining Sect would need to show her some respect.

Chapter 88: The Taming of the Ghost Doctor

(2)

Who could ever claim that they would never be in need of an emergency treatment within their lifetime?

However, the Ghost Doctor was rather contradicting in her actions. She would never accept disciples, and did not like to have any observers while she was treating her patients. If you offended her, then she would refuse to treat your ailments no matter the price! She has also refused to join any of the current influential organizations.

Gu Ruoyun smiled, "So the great Ghost Doctor only knows a few silly tricks... I thought that the Ghost Doctor would be someone very capable and skilled. I didn't expect for it to simply be rumors that blew everything out of proportion. Even if you were willing to accept me as your disciple, I wouldn't want to have you as my master."

"Bang!"

The Ghost Doctor slammed her fist on the table and suddenly rose from her seat. The scars on her face became warped, making her look terribly sinister, "You've got guts, you silly little girl! You dare mock my medical skills? Who knows what you were even doing when I made my name as the Ghost Doctor!"

"Oh? Is that so?" Gu Ruoyun raised her eyebrows and smiled, "Since you're so amazing, then why can't you cure the scars on your own face?"

The scars on the Ghost Doctor's face were the sorrows of her entire life. Even now, just thinking about them would cause her heart to ache just as much as it did when they first appeared. Back then, her medical skills were still weak. So all she could do was treat the poison that was infecting her wounds. However, she was

unable to restore her original appearance. Even though her medical skills had improved by leaps and bounds since then, her wounds have long aged over the passage of time. How could she possibly treat them now?

Thus, when Gu Ruoyun spoke of her wounds, her face turned black in an instant. A murderous intent suddenly erupted from her body, spreading around the entire hall.

Mister Liu grew anxious, "Lady Gu, please don't offend the Ghost Doctor any further. If you continue on this way, then my wife won't receive her treatment."

He was regretting it now. He was completely regretting it.

If he had known that Gu Ruoyun would speak to her in this manner, he would never have brought her here. Judging by the Honorable Ghost Doctor's temper, if anyone were to provoke her, she might not kill the person, but she would refuse to treat them...

"Don't worry, even if the Ghost Doctor refuses to treat your wife, I'll be able to return her a clean bill of health," Gu Ruoyun smiled, "Furthermore, I can see that this Ghost Doctor isn't all that skilled after all, otherwise she would never have left the wounds on her face untreated."

"Hahaha!"

The Ghost Doctor burst into wild laughter. She gritted her teeth with rage as murderous intent burned clearly in her beautiful eyes.

"How boastful of a little girl. This is the first time I've ever seen such actions from a little girl! I wasn't able to treat the wounds on my face, but that's because it has been far too long. There's not a single person on this mainland who can cure an affliction that I cannot."

"Is that so? So, what if I'm able to cure it?"

The young girl's clam and tranquil voice startled the Ghost Doctor momentarily. She then let out a peal of loud laughter,

"You're far too arrogant, little girl. I've already told you, no one can cure an affliction that I cannot!"

The corner of the Ghost Doctor's lips carried a trace of disdain. Her mocking gaze swept over the girl's pretty, delicate face. She never believed that someone in this world could actually surpass her medical skills. So it was even more impossible that that "someone" would turn out to be this girl, who still stank of her mother's milk!

Seeing how the Ghost Doctor was already hooked, Gu Ruoyun's smile grew even more prominent, "If I successfully cure you, what will you give me for it in return?"

"Hmph!" The Ghost Doctor scoffed, "If you can successfully cure me, then I'll tell the entire mainland that I, the Ghost Doctor, am no match for your skills."

Gu Ruoyun smiled gently, raised her index finger, and waved it in front of the Ghost Doctor. She shook her head and said, "No, I don't need you to say that. You're still the best medicinal practitioner in the mainland. However, I want you to swear your fealty to me and dedicate your entire life to me — never to leave or betray me! If you dare swear that, I dare prove my words to you."

The Ghost Doctor stared blankly for a short moment. I had always enjoyed my freedom, and have even rejected all invitations from influential sects. Now, this little girl is asking me to swear my fealty to her?

Chapter 89: The Taming of the Ghost Doctor

(3)

"Why? Are you scared?" Gu Ruoyun shrugged, "I've always thought that the Ghost Doctor would have more courage than anyone else. I didn't think that a small little wager like this would scare you away. Since that's the case, then forget about it, I'm leaving now."

Gu Ruoyun then shook her head, her face full of disappointment.

Seeing how Gu Ruoyun was about to leave, the Ghost Doctor grit her teeth and said, "Hmph! Who told you that I was scared? Unless the Celestial Deity Daluo arrives, no one else can remove the scar on my face. It's impossible for a silly little girl like you, no matter how great your abilities are! Fine then! I'll accept your challenge! If you manage to remove the scars on my face, I'll swear my fealty to you. If I ever betray you, I'll willingly allow my family line to end with me, and enter the 18 levels of hell, never to be reborn."

Never underestimate the power of oaths. In this mainland filled with miracles, no one would dare violate their oaths, for fear of regretting the consequences in the future.

Once, there was a strong cultivator who broke his oath, and in the end, in accordance with the oath he made, his four limbs were broken and he was turned into ashes by lightning.

Thus, once you have made an oath, you had to follow it through!

Gu Ruoyun paused in her footsteps, she turned to look at the Ghost Doctor who was still gritting her teeth. She smiled as if she was getting away with some sinister plot.

"Take this Beauty Rejuvenation Pill."

Beauty Rejuvenation Pill? The Ghost Doctor was momentarily stunned. She looked hesitatingly at the pill in Gu Ruoyun's hands. Finally, she took the Beauty Rejuvenation Pill and carefully

swallowed it down.

The reason why the Ghost Doctor would daringly take the Beauty Rejuvenation Pill, was entirely because she was an expert in poison. Furthermore, she had already become immune to most types of poison and was not afraid of being harmed by Gu Ruoyun.

"Hmph! Let's see how you're going to end this!"

The Ghost Doctor scoffed and replied mockingly.

However, just as she had finished speaking, the wounds on her face began to itch, as if ten thousand ants were crawling over her wounds. It was so itchy that she couldn't help but raise up hands to her face to scratch her wounds...

Suddenly, Gu Ruoyun's single rebuke stopped her hand.

"Don't scratch, or you will bear the consequences on your own!"

"You..." The Ghost Doctor was infuriated to the point of insanity, "I've already become immune to most types of poison eight years ago, how is your medicine affecting me? What grudge do we have between us, for you to come here, simply to harm me?"

I have been too careless, she thought regretfully, thinking that I was immune to poison. And now, I have fallen into this little girl's plot.

The Ghost Doctor grew so angry at the thought, that she gritted her teeth until it ached but she did not dare to make any reckless moves.

"Hon... Honorable Ghost Doctor, your face..." Mister Liu let out a cry out of shock. He was completely tongue-tied.

"What's happened to my face?"

The Ghost Doctor frowned and snatched up the mirror from a table. Then, with one glance, she was rooted to the ground in shock...

The terrible scars on her face were forming scabs bit by bit, then

falling off her face. After every fallen scab, the light pink wounds then rapidly changed back into fair white skin ...

There must be something wrong with my eyes! She thought in shock. That's right, I must be going blind!

There was no need to mention about how hard it was to treat old wounds, even with the strongest medicines, there would not be any results so quickly. Furthermore, the scars were recovering at a speed that the human eye could clearly see.

What does this mean? She thought in panic. It was terribly frightening!

The Ghost Doctor stayed so still that she seemed lifeless. Suddenly, she burst into wild laughter — a kind that carried unbridled joy.

"You wretched couple... For the sake of stealing the Treasury of Medicine that the master left in my care, you joined forces and ruined my face... You've even poisoned the wounds you left, in order to use the antidote as a means to force me to give you the book. You probably never would have thought that I would successfully escape and cure the poison! It's been ten years... For ten years, your betrayal has always come to mind whenever I look upon the wounds on my face! I never thought that I could ever recover my original appearance..."

Chapter 90: The Taming of the Ghost Doctor

(4)

She hated them... And how could she not? Between the two of them, was someone who had made a solemn vow to her while the other was a fellow junior female apprentice who had been so reliant on her. The both of them had joined together in order to betray her... All for the sake of a medical book, and had even made it so that she could never return to the Medicine Order.

As she laughed, tears rolled down the Ghost Doctor's cheeks.

She had remained independent for so long, not joining any organizations or any sects. One of the reasons for this was for freedom, but the second one, was because her roots were in the Medicine Order. However, with her face ruined, the disciples of the Medicine Order would never be able to recognize her for being the successor that her master had been most proud of, all those years ago...

Furthermore, now that the Medicine Order was under the control of that wretched couple, returning there was the equivalent of suicide!

"I will keep my word, little girl." The Ghost Doctor wiped away the tears on her face. Her lovely face held the glow of resolution, "However, while I'm willing to work for you, I don't want to be a part of any organizations that are under your wing. My master had left his organization to my inheritance long ago, but I was not able to properly take care of it for him. So I will return to my organization in the future, whenever I get the chance. Since that was the most ardent form of hope that he had left for me, I don't want him to have died with any grievance left in this world."

Gu Ruoyun smiled, she had not expected that the Ghost Doctor would turn out to be someone who highly valued relationships and loyalty. This is the kind of person that she needed.

"As long as you're willing to stay by my side, it does not count as breaking your oath."

The Ghost Doctor felt such immense gratitude in her heart. If Gu Ruoyun had forced her to join her organization, she would have had no other choice. She had to return to her organization, even if she had to break the oath! However, Gu Ruoyun did not do so...

This made the remaining dissatisfaction that the Ghost Doctor had felt towards Gu Ruoyun, fade away.

"Did you make that Beauty Rejuvenation Pill, girl?"

The Ghost Doctor looked at Gu Ruoyun with anticipation.

"This..." Gu Ruoyun rubbed her nose in hesitation but nodded in the end.

The Beauty Rejuvenation Pill was one of the three pill formulas in the first level of the Ancient Divine Pagoda. Once she had thought of the rumors surrounding the Ghost Doctor in the mainland, she went ahead prepared this very pill.

Luckily, the Ghost Doctor had agreed to join her in the end.

"Did you really refine this, girl?" The Ghost Doctor's eyes lit up, "Unless I am mistaken, that was one of the legendary pills? Although this pill isn't of much use to cultivators, the women of the world are rather vain. If we put up this pill up for auction, we'll surely be able to make a huge amount of money."

Auction? Gu Ruoyun's heart trembled, why didn't I think of that? Especially since I've been lacking in finances of late...

Although Hundred Herb Hall made quite a bit of money, training her team would cost much, much more. She needed more money.

"What a pity," The Ghost Doctor shook her head disappointedly, "It's already lucky enough to have one pill... Considering how miraculous pills are known to be. No one has ever been able to refine something like that for over thousands of years."

Upon seeing the regretful sighs of the Ghost Doctor, Gu Ruoyun said nothing but her eyes darkened, as she went into deep thoughts.

As if she had remembered something, the Ghost Doctor turned her head to look at Mister Liu, who was in a daze. She spoke to him coldly, "Remember, you're not allowed to speak about what happened today. Otherwise, consider the life of your wife in forfeit! I can save her, but I can also kill her without anyone ever noticing! If you even dare to blurt a single word, you won't ever be able to escape from me even if you run to the edge of the world!"

Mister Liu could not help but shiver, he hurriedly replied, "Please rest easy, honorable Ghost Doctor. I won't say a single word, no one will know what happened today!"

Satisfied, the Ghost Doctor nodded, "I hope that you'll remember your own promise. Otherwise, I'll ensure that your Liu family will never have a day of rest! I have something else to do today, so I'll return tomorrow to treat your wife."

Chapter 91: The Taming Of The Ghost Doctor (5)

Mister Liu did not dare express any form of dissatisfaction at the Ghost Doctor's words. He could only respond respectfully, "As you wish, Ghost Doctor."

"Little girl," The Ghost Doctor turned to look at Gu Ruoyun, her expression carrying a hint of flattery, "How did you manage to refine that Beauty Rejuvenation Pill? Can you teach me?"

At the beginning, the Ghost Doctor was only willing to listen to Gu Ruoyun, simply because of the oath she had to make. However, once she knew that Gu Ruoyun was indeed the one who had refined the Beauty Rejuvenation pill, her attitude completely changed. She did not even dare to have the slightest trace of disrespect in her voice.

Gu Ruoyun, on the other hand, had admitted to refining the Beauty Rejuvenation Pill on her own, simply to make the Ghost Doctor obey her more willingly!

"About that... I'll have to ask my teacher for his opinion."

Gu Ruoyun rubbed her nose. Of course, this teacher was completely imaginary, but the Ghost Doctor did not suspect anything at all.

Based on Gu Ruoyun's age, how could she have refined a legendary pill, if she did not have a teacher? The Ghost Doctor thought. Furthermore, her teacher is probably an old demon who had lived for many, many years...

"How about this then... Accept me as your disciple, little girl. You should feel proud of having the Ghost Doctor as your disciple." The Ghost Doctor chuckled. Clearly, in her eyes, Gu Ruoyun was like a juicy slab of meat.

Gu Ruoyun glanced at the Ghost Doctor's smiling face, which was

filled with flattery. She then shrugged and said, "Your medical skills aren't good enough. You're not worthy to become my disciple."

If this had come out from any other person's mouth, the Ghost Doctor would surely have snorted in disdain but coming from her? She was a genius who could refine pills! The Ghost Doctor's medical skills were indeed paled in comparison to her.

After giving her answer, Gu Ruoyun bid farewell to Mister Liu, "My business is done here. Thank you for your guidance today, farewell."

She then turned and headed towards the door.

Upon seeing that Gu Ruoyun was about to disappear, the Ghost Doctor no longer cared about her act. She hurriedly ran after her.

"Wait for me, little master! Please, wait!"

...

Meanwhile, in the imperial courtyard, Imperial Concubine Ling was relaxing on a chaise lounge. She then turned towards a palace maid beside her and asked, "Where did His Imperial Highness go to after the dismissal of the morning court today?"

The palace maid replied respectfully, "It seems that the fourth prince of Vermillion Bird Country has come for a visit, so His Imperial Highness went to give him a welcome."

"The fourth prince of Vermillion Bird Country?" Imperial Concubine Ling frowned. Suddenly, a voice was heard from outside her door.

"Imperial Concubine, the second granddaughter of the Ling family, Ling Yu, is requesting for an audience."

"Xiao Ling Yu?" Imperial Concubine Ling rubbed her temples, feeling a headache, "That girl loves to cause trouble and has already caused no small amount of trouble for the Ling family. I

wonder why she's here today... Let her in, servants."

Just as she gave the order, a fragrant breeze that came with the sound of loud sobbing blew in from outside the hall.

Ling Yu threw herself into Imperial Concubine Ling's embrace, and cried out miserably, "Aunty! You have to bring justice for Grandfather and Brother!"

"What's happened to your grandfather and your brother?" Imperial Concubine Ling asked as she frowned elegantly.

His Imperial Highness did not like his concubines to ask about matters outside the palace. The moment they entered the palace would be the same moment they severed any ties they had to the outside world. No news from outside the palace would ever reach her ears...

Thus, Imperial Concubine Ling still did not know of what had befallen the Ling family.

"Aunt, Grandfather is dead because of Gu Ruoyun! She's even caused my brother to become a cripple. He was even taken away by the Luo family!"

"What did you say?"

Imperial Concubine Ling rose from her seat immediately, and tightly clenched her fists. She slowly asked, "Is this true?"

"It's all true," Ling Yu cried pitifully, "Gu Ruoyun allowed someone on her side to kill Grandfather. She's even crippled Brother herself. However, Second Granduncle is refusing to avenge Grandfather and Brother. After Grandfather passed away, he took full control of the family and has even sent people to watch over me so that I wouldn't enter the palace to inform you about this. I had a hard time escaping the spies he had and running here to you."

Chapter 92: Ling Yu's Greediness (1)

Imperial Concubine Ling slowly shut her eyes, her fists began to clench tighter and tighter as her elegant face unconsciously began to twist in a horrible manner. After a long pause, her eyes finally opened and she let out a breath of air.

"The Luo family... and Gu Ruoyun... I have a whole new level of respect for you now! Despite your knowledge that my father had a daughter as powerful as me, you still dared to cause him harm! Very well, don't blame me for taking revenge for my father's sake!"

"Aunty."

Ling Yu lifted the gaze of her tear-stained eyes and looked at Imperial Concubine Ling pitifully.

"Yu'er, go send the message of my imperial decree. Gu Ruoyun is to present herself before me!"

Imperial Concubine Ling coldly declared.

General Luo was one of the men whom His Royal Highness relied heavily upon in the imperial court and while Imperial Concubine Ling was indeed a favored concubine, she would not be able to take down a general who had been granted great authority by the Emperor Himself. Gu Ruoyun, on the other hand, was different. Although the Hundred Herb Hall was strong and influential, she was merely a little apprentice. Shopkeeper Zhao of the Hundred Herb Hall was a clever man; he would never make an enemy of the entire Azure Dragon Country over an apprentice.

"Yes, Aunty."

Ling Yu was overjoyed, and a hint of viciousness flashed through her eyes.

"This time, let's see how you're going to survive this, Gu Ruoyun! Even if you had a hundred lives, they won't save you now! As long as I have my the imperial decree from my Aunt, the Hundred Herb

Hall would be mine if I so desired, what more a little apprentice like you."

It was clear that in Ling Yu's heart, as powerful as the Hundred Herb Hall may be, it was only a little merchant shop that was powerless against the imperial powers.

...

In the imperial study.

Zuo Shangchen lazed on a sedan, his expression sleepy and insubordinate. His almond-shaped eyes carried a hint of a seductive smile and he could not even be bothered to look at the Emperor properly, who was sitting on the throne.

"Zuo Shangchen, is this your idea of proper etiquette as the fourth prince of the Vermillion Bird Country?" Leng Yanfeng knit his eyebrows, his somber face holding cold and clear disdain.

Upon hearing this, Zuo Shangchen smiled.

Nothing on earth could be compared with his magnificent smile. Not only were the women charmed, even men could not help but hold their breath in amazement.

"Your Royal Highness, I am far too used to doing as I like so I don't understand ceremonial etiquette. If I am unfit to speak with the Emperor of your country because of this, then I will take my leave."

After he spoke, Zuo Shangchen's sedan got ready to leave when the Emperor, Leng Wujing, suddenly spoke up to stop him.

"Halt!"

"Why? You were the ones who are saying that I had no understanding of proper etiquette. Don't tell me that you're going to stop me from leaving after saying such things?"

Zuo Shangchen waved his feather fan and replied with a smile.

Leng Wujing narrowed His eyes. He had always thought that He

could see through anyone, but since the beginning, He could not read this mischievous, smiling man at all...

It was as if he was a puzzle, filled with danger, a danger that filled him with fear...

That was right. Fear!

Even Leng Wujing didn't know the reason for this. To actually think that even as the ruler of a country, He would actually be afraid of a young man that was only in his twenties.

"Fourth Prince, let's be straightforward about this. Why have you come all the way from Vermillion Bird Country to Azure Dragon Country?"

"Oh," Zuo Shangchen caressed his chin and smiled lazily, "For one person."

"Who?"

"Gu Ruoyun!"

Gu Ruoyun? Leng Wujing was stunned. Gu Ruoyun... This name had been appearing quite often of late. Who would have thought that Zuo Shangchen would have come all the way here, just for her?

"Hmph!"

Leng Yanfeng scoffed, and replied expressionlessly, "Zuo Shangchen, as far as I know, you aren't even acquainted with Gu Ruoyun."

"We didn't know each other before," Zuo Shangchen raised his eyebrows, "However, I've long heard of her name. I came from far away just to meet her. It is laughable that such an incomparable genius would actually be mistaken as a good-for-nothing by every one of you. If I hadn't come here by coincidence, I wouldn't have known that such a talented person would actually exist in this world."

Chapter 93: Ling Yu's Greediness (2)

Leng Yanfeng froze. It was as if he had heard something unbelievable. Then, a slight smile appeared on his usually grave face.

His smile, regardless of how you looked at it, was full of mockery.

"A person, who has still remained at the Qi Collection ranks after so many years... Is this the genius you're speaking of? It would seem that the Vermillion Bird Country has truly, declined to such a state. If someone like this can be considered a genius, then is everyone in the Vermillion Bird Country stuck in the Qi Collection ranks?"

It wasn't just Leng Yanfeng this time because even Leng Wujing had begun to feel that Zuo Shangchen's words were simply a joke.

"Fourth Prince, you must be joking. If someone with her level of power could be considered a genius, then what should Lady Shi Yun, who has reached the level of Martial King at such an early age, be considered as?" Leng Wujing shook his head. He found this entire affair rather hilarious. We really don't know how the Fourth Prince could have determined that Gu Ruoyun was a genius. Leng Wujing thought. This lie was way too obvious.

Zuo Shangchen smiled, "As far as I know, Shi Yun is already twenty years of age, and Xiao Yun'er is only fifteen. I dare guarantee that in about five more years, her capabilities would be on par with Shi Yun's!"

"Shut up!"

Suddenly, Leng Yanfeng's expression turned extremely cold. His black eyes were like two sharp blades as he shot a frosty glare towards Zuo Shangchen, "You don't have the right to talk about Shi Yun's talent! Especially when you compare her to that good-for-nothing, Gu Ruoyun! She's not even worthy! Even if we're

talking about ten, twenty, or even thirty years, she will never be able to surpass Shi Yun!"

Shi Yun was the goddess of his heart, where all of his faith rested. He would never allow anyone to insult Shi Yun!

"Feng'er," Leng Wujing glanced sideways at Leng Yanfeng before turning his attention back to Zuo Shangchen, "Is the Fourth Prince willing to take a bet with me? No matter how much time you give to Gu Ruoyun, she'll never be able to surpass Lady Shi Yun."

"My apologies." The corner of Zuo Shangchen's lips curled into a faint smile, "I have no interest in placing bets on a sure thing. Furthermore, there is no prize that interests me in Azure Dragon Country."

Leng Wujing's expression suddenly turned deadly serious. Despite His fear of Zuo Shangchen, He was still the ruler of this country; getting slapped across the face like this made Him feel extremely unhappy.

"I only came here to ask You, Your Imperial Highness to warn Your good son. Don't trouble Gu Ruoyun anymore. He is no match for her status. Now, since I've said my piece, it's time for me to leave."

Zuo Shangchen stretched lazily. His gaze seemed to have accidentally swept across Leng Yanfeng's face, the mockery in his almond-shaped eyes promptly deepened just as his eyes landed on him.

Gu Shengxiao, I wonder how you'll thank me for protecting your sister like this? Zuo Shangchen thought.

As if seeing Gu Shengxiao's extremely grateful face before him, Zuo Shangchen laughed loudly, "Qingyi, let's go. To the Hundred Herb Hall! I'm going to go play with Xiao Yun'er."

"Yes, My Lord."

Qingyi bowed her head and joined her hands fist-to-fist

expressionlessly. As she looked at that man's lazy yet bewitching face, helplessness flashed across the depths of her eyes.

She had been retained by her lord's side for so many years, and clearly understood everything about his mysophobia. He refused to let anyone help him, even during dressing — not even his own mother's concubine.

However, it was only in the company of that man alone, that he would allow casual touches, arms across his shoulder, that he would smile so comfortably, so freely...

Qingyi felt a little bitterness in her heart at the thought of this. She had accompanied her lord for so many years, silently loving him this entire time. However, her years of companionship could not compare to that one year of friendship between that man and her lord...

Chapter 94: Ling Yu's Greediness (3)

"My Lady, you've finally returned."

Elder Yu was pacing worriedly in the courtyard. However, as he noticed Gu Ruoyun walking towards him, he finally felt that he could relax.

"My Lady, this is..."

Suddenly, he noticed the eye-catching woman who was following closely behind Gu Ruoyun and froze.

"Her?" Gu Ruoyun glanced at the woman behind her, "She's the Ghost Doctor, but she's going to be my subordinate from now on."

"What?"

Elder Yu's eyes widened in surprise.

What did my Lady say? That she, had accepted the Ghost Doctor as her subordinate? Everyone on the mainland knew how eccentric the Ghost Doctor was and she had always preferred to remain free and alone. Years ago, she had rejected the Weapon Refining Sect, even when they had sent her an invitation.

However, no matter how arrogant the Weapon Refining Sect was, they did not dare to go so far as to force the Ghost Doctor so brazenly.

The status of the Ghost Doctor on this mainland was very clear...

"The Dongfang family's servant?" The Ghost Doctor's eyes swept across Elder Yu, then she curled her lip in disapproval, "However, it does seem that you do not have a very good position in the Dongfang family, otherwise you wouldn't have been sent to this place."

"Wei Yiyi." Gu Ruoyun frowned as she called the Ghost Doctor by name before she said, "Elder Yu is one of the elders in the Dongfang family and has helped me a lot. You are not to disrespect

him."

Seeing Gu Ruoyun come to his defense, Elder Yu felt moved. The Young Master did not choose the wrong person. However, what shocked Elder Yu was that despite the rebuke by Guo Ruoyun, the Ghost Doctor was not angry at all!

The Ghost Doctor has always had an explosive temper. How could she allow herself to be scolded in front of someone else in such a manner without so much as a retaliation?

"Elder Yu, where has Xiao Ye gone to?"

Gu Ruoyun raised her eyebrows. Normally, when she returned home, Qianbei Ye would be one of the first to appear in front of her. However, this time she did not even see the silhouette of his figure...

"Eldest Miss, the transfer of the Liu ancestral home is complete. Lord Qianbei has gone over to help you with the clean-up of the rooms, my Lady. He's currently not in the Hundred Herb Hall."

"Is that so?" Gu Ruoyun stroked her chin thoughtfully and then smiled, "If that's the case, I'll move over tonight. It'll be good to get the Devil Sect settled in as well. Wei Yiyi, follow me."

"Yes, master Yun'er."

The Ghost Doctor smiled like a fox, her mesmerizing eyes were full of mischief and her tone was extremely seductive.

Master Yun'er?

Elder Yu's eyes widened in shock. I didn't hear this incorrectly, did I? The Ghost Doctor called my Lady... Master?

Uh...

Without allowing Elder Yu the chance to react, the two figures disappeared from his sight.

...

The people of the Devil Sect were already waiting for Gu Ruoyun in the ancestral home. However, as Gu Ruoyun appeared with Wei Yiyi following closely behind her, everyone felt their bones turn to mush. Even though the Ghost Doctor was already close to her thirties, she looked as if she was in her twenties after she took the Beauty Rejuvenation Pill. The expressions she had on her face made her look like a fox spirit; her seductive demeanor was simply too enticing.

However, upon hearing that this beautiful woman was the famous Ghost Doctor, they could no longer keep their calm.

It would seem that their master had great power... Even the Ghost Doctor who could not be tamed had been brought under her wing. Did they still need to worry about the lack of experts within the Devil Sect?

This was especially true for Xunfeng. Compared to the mocking and ridicule he had directed towards Gu Ruoyun, his attitude had now turned into endless joy in the fact that she was his master. His revenge was well within reach.

"Xunfeng, Moyu, handle the accommodation arrangements for the Devil Sect. If there's anything that you do not understand, just ask the Ghost Doctor. She's more experienced. Oh, and one more thing, I'm going to go into a closed-door cultivation for a month. No one is allowed to disturb me for the entire month."

Chapter 95: Ling Yu's Greediness (4)

"Yes, Master."

Xunfeng and Moyu simultaneously joined their fists, bowed and replied respectfully.

Since Gu Ruoyun had now moved out of the Hundred Herb Hall, both Ling Yu and Zuo Shangchen were not able to find her. Zuo Shangchen said nothing and simply turned to leave. However, Ling Yu was not as easy to get rid of.

"I have the imperial concubine's imperial decree! Get Gu Ruoyun to come out here to receive it, immediately!"

Ling Yu raised her chin as her greedy eyes landed on the many valuable herbs within the Hundred Herb Hall.

If I could obtain the Hundred Herb Hall, the Crown Prince would surely take notice of me. From then on, the next logical move would be to become the Crown Prince's consort and someday, I would become the Empress, the mother of the nation.

"She's not in the Hundred Herb Hall. You've come to the wrong place."

Elder Yu's expression darkened. He replied expressionlessly.

"I don't care where she is. Get her out here to see me this instant!" Ling Yu smiled coldly, "Unless she intends to disobey the imperial decree! By then, even the Hundred Herb Hall wouldn't be able to protect her! Furthermore, the imperial concubine has made another decree. Seeing as the Hundred Herb Hall is giving shelter to my grandfather's murderer, they are hereby sentenced to punishment. However, the imperial concubine is merciful. If you hand over the reigns of the Hundred Herb Hall, then we'll leave you with your lives."

Of course, that last sentence came entirely from Ling Yu.

She had been eyeing Hundred Herb Hall for way longer than just a day or two. So why would she not use this opportunity to steal the Hundred Herb Hall for herself? Even if the imperial concubine got angry at her at a later time, she could offer her the precious herbs that were held within the walls of the Hundred Herb Hall to pacify her anger.

Ling Yu had it all planned out perfectly. Unfortunately, it easier said than done...

"Heh." Elder Yu smiled coldly, "Such savagery at such a young age, little girl. I'd like to see how exactly do you plan on taking all of our lives!"

Having lived for so many years, this was the first time he had met such a courageous little girl. Even though the Hundred Herb Hall now belonged to Gu Ruoyun, he was still a member of the Dongfang family.

This little imperial concubine's niece wants to kill me? He thought. Haha, it was ridiculous.

"You old fart! You're just a measly merchant and yet you have the gall to disobey the imperial powers? My aunt is the imperial concubine! Why would she fear a mere merchant like you? I'd advise you to hand over the Hundred Herb Hall or you won't be able to continue your stay in the Azure Dragon Country."

Ling Yu could tell that Elder Yu held a position of power and respect in the Hundred Herb Hall. So, she assumed that he was the real owner of the Hundred Herb Hall who was working behind the scenes! She did not even consider the possibility that Gu Ruoyun was the real owner. After all, Gu Ruoyun was only a little girl. In the days when the Hundred Herb Hall was built, she had yet to be born.

"Great... Just great! Haha!" Elder Yu grew angry but laughed instead. His eyes were set ablaze with a fiery flame as he said, "I'd like to see how you're going to do it. Show me how you'll be

driving me out of Azure Dragon Country!"

"I tried to warn you, but I see that you're not going to heed my warning."

Ling Yu sneered, waved her hand, and gave an order to the people behind her, "Men! Take this old fart and bring him to the imperial concubine."

However, just as she had finished speaking, the old man's figure suddenly disappeared. When he reappeared, he was already in front of Ling Yu...

Before Ling Yu even managed to react, Elder Yu's palm landed fiercely on her chest, causing her entire body to fly backward and hit the ground with a loud thud. Then, a voice filled with murderous intent rang in everyone's ears.

"Get out of my sight!!!"

The old man straightened his long sleeves with a flick of his wrist, his elderly face cold as ice.

"Cough, cough!" Ling Yu spat out two mouthfuls of blood before spitting at him while she gritted her teeth, "You old fart... Just you wait... You'll pay for this!"

She hurriedly stood up, and left, with her tail between her legs towards the direction that she had initially arrived from...

Chapter 96: An Early Stage Martial Warrior (1)

One month later...

Within a room, the curtains fluttered as a warm spring breeze caressed the delicate cheeks of Gu Ruoyun.

Her eyes were closed as if she were asleep. Gu Ruoyun's black tresses lightly brushed against the sides of her face in the wind; she looked serene yet mesmerizing.

Then, within the Ancient Divine Pagoda, a man stood with his hands behind his back, wearing a gilded violet robe that fluttered on its own. His matching violet eyes held traces of a smile, but his lips grew into an evil curl as he watched the young girl in front of him.

"This place... this is the second level of the Ancient Divine Pagoda. You'll receive your reward for achieving Martial Warrior here."

The second level of the Ancient Divine Pagoda... Even though Gu Ruoyun was still unaware of what the reward would be, she was sure that it would not be worse than the pill formulas from the first level...

"Is this... the pill formula for the Spirit Gathering Pill?"

The Spirit Gathering Pill was considered to be the next level of the Qi Gathering Pill. For example, someone like Elder Yu, who was stuck at the final stage of Martial General would not be able to break through to the next rank with the use of a Qi Gathering Pill. This was why she had not allowed Elder Yu to use a Qi Gathering Pill to begin with.

However, if she had Spirit Gathering Pills, it would be a completely different story. This pill was effective even for cultivators who were at the rank of Martial General. It would allow

them to successfully break through to the next level.

Gu Ruoyun's heart clenched at the mere thought of this.

Although she now had the Hundred Herb Hall and Devil Sect within her grasp, she still lacked a true expert cultivator within her ranks. If Elder Yu were to become a Martial King, they could do as they pleased within the Azure Dragon Country.

"I see that the rewards for the second level are three pill formulas, again. The Spirit Gathering Pill, Blood Replenishing Pill as well as the Spirit Recovery Pill."

Everyone knew that cultivators used their spiritual power to battle. Should their spiritual power run out, the cultivator would be in a potentially fatal situation. Hence, Spirit Recovery Pills were used to recover a cultivator's spiritual power. Blood Replenishing Pills, on the other hand, were meant to treat wounds, as its name would suggest.

Gu Ruoyun carefully kept the pill formulas, before she smiled and said, "I was still worrying over how I could help Elder Yu achieve his breakthrough. I didn't think that I would obtain the Spirit Gathering Pill just like that... Mmm?"

Suddenly, Gu Ruoyun could feel a disturbance coming from her drained spiritual weapon. Then, it flew quickly towards her, and floated upright in front of her...

"What's going on, Zixie? This drained spiritual weapon has already lost all of its spiritual power, why would it..."

Zixie did not speak, his eyes fixed upon the drained spiritual weapon with a profound gaze. He remained silent for half a minute before he gave a slow reply, "Try transferring some of your own spiritual power into this drained spiritual weapon, little girl."

"Okay."

Gu Ruoyun nodded as her jade-white fingers settled on the surface of the drained spiritual weapon. She then slowly closed her

eyes.

A portion of her spiritual power began to flow from her palm, slowing entering the drained spiritual weapon as it got gradually absorbed by the weapon. Suddenly, a fierce light shone from within the spiritual weapon, enveloping the entire Ancient Divine Pagoda...

"What... what's happening?"

Gu Ruoyun was in a daze. She had no clue on what was going on.

"I see that my guess was correct," Zixie smiled, "The second level of the Ancient Divine Pagoda has given you another power, little girl — the ability to nurture weapons!"

"The ability to nurture weapons? What do you mean?" Gu Ruoyun blinked, looking bewildered as she looked at Zixie's mischievous yet charming smile.

Zixie smiled gently, "Put simply, you can now transfer spiritual power into normal weapons and turn them into spiritual weapons. Of course, the one that you have in your hands is one of the lowest ranked spiritual weapons. Your powers are currently not strong enough to upgrade it into a middle or high ranked spiritual weapon. As for legendary godly weapons, you must have the materials to forge these weapons first. However, having a real spiritual weapon right from the start will be beneficial to your future growth."

Chapter 97: An Early Stage Martial Warrior

(2)

Gu Ruoyun's heart instantly skipped a beat. She looked at the spiritual weapon in her hands in astonishment. It took a long time before she recovered her senses.

So, what Zixie meant was that from now on, as long as I wished for it, I could have as many spiritual weapons as I wanted? She mused.

Even on the East Peak Mainland, spiritual weapons were extremely rare. Furthermore, this was on the West Spirit Mainland which was much poorer in resources if compared to the East Peak Mainland.

In the Weapon Refining Sect, only the Sect Master held a low ranked spiritual weapon and yet, he kept it hidden away like a great treasure.

If I could forge an unlimited number of spiritual weapons... What did this mean? She wondered. That means that in the near future, I would have an extremely strong team!

"There's not much time, little girl," Zixie ruffled Gu Ruoyun's hair. A trace of worry appeared in his violet eyes, "You have to grow as fast as you can, for the recovery of my strength is dependent on your growth."

"Zixie..." Gu Ruoyun raised her head to look upon Zixie's handsome face. She bit her lip and asked, "Who is your enemy? And what enemy am I supposed to face in the future?"

Zixie lowered his head and smiled at the girl in front of him, "There are some things that I am unable to tell you just yet, little girl but I can give you a promise. When you return to the East Peak Mainland and avenge your mother and brother from your previous life, I'll tell you everything."

Gu Ruoyun froze upon hearing this, "Alright, I'll have my revenge soon! When the time comes, tell me everything you know, including Qianbei Ye's identity."

"I promise."

The smile on Zixie's face grew deeper. He did not realize it, but those violet eyes began to fill with an intention to pamper her.

...

Just as she had left the Ancient Divine Pagoda, Gu Ruoyun felt a warm breath on her face. Instantly, her heart was gripped with alarm. She quickly opened her eyes and threw a punch without even looking.

Peng!

The punch hit him directly in the eye. The culprit squatted down pitifully in a corner, his tear-filled eyes fixed in a stare full of accusations as if Gu Ruoyun had committed an unspeakable crime to him.

However, when accompanied by that exceptionally beautiful face, his look of pity was simply a feast for the eyes. Not even the words 'devastatingly beautiful' would be enough to describe his startling beauty.

Of course, first, you would have to ignore the black eye on the left...

"Xiao Ye?"

Gu Ruoyun blinked, "What's happened to your eye?"

What happened to my eye? Was it not her handiwork? Qianbei Ye thought.

Qianbei Ye pouted like an unhappy little wife, "I came to wake you up, but..."

Gu Ruoyun suddenly recalled throwing the punch. She rubbed her nose, feeling a little embarrassed, "Sorry, I didn't know that it

was you! By the way, why didn't you dodge the punch instead?"

"Dodge?" Qianbei Ye frowned, "I don't know how to dodge."

"Uh..."

"I only know how to fight back."

Qianbei Ye then raised his head to look at Gu Ruoyun.

Perhaps the word 'dodge' did not exist in his mind, so he would not know how to do such a thing. In his mind, he would kill whoever dared to harm him, so why would he ever need to dodge?

"Then why didn't you fight back?"

Gu Ruoyun asked, a little confused. Seeing the power that Qianbei Ye had shown when he had killed Ling Yi so easily, she would not have been able to harm even a single strand of hair on his head if he did not wish it.

Qianbei Ye thought for a while, then shook his head and said, "I couldn't fight back. I can't control my strength when I fight back. It might have hurt you."

So, he had willingly taken my punch? Gu Ruoyun was flabbergasted. She opened her mouth to speak, but did not know what to say...

Chapter 98: An Early Stage Martial Warrior

(3)

"Xiao Yun, have I said something wrong?"

Seeing that Gu Ruoyun's sudden silence, a wave of panic began to build up in Qianbei Ye's heart so he decided to word his questions carefully.

Gu Ruoyun shook her head, her gaze was filled with complicated emotions, "Xiao Ye, back when Ling Yi was about to strike me, why did you protect me? Why are you treating me so nicely?"

"I don't know." Qianbei Ye looked at the girl's delicate face, with red eyes that showed his resolve, "I only know that I've wanted to protect you from the first moment I saw you."

The depths of Gu Ruoyun's heart began to shake, and she slowly closed her eyes.

In the past, someone had also promised to protect and take care of her but... in the end, she had caused the death of her little brother, simply because she had placed her trust in the wrong person.

"Xiao Ye, I've been here for more than a month now. I don't know if the Hundred Herb Hall has encountered any trouble, I'm going over for a visit first."

The girl opened her eyes, and a smile appeared on her pretty face.

Mother, Yu'er, Grandfather... Rest assured, there will be a day when I return to the East Peak Mainland, paving the path of my return with the blood of our enemies!

"Oh one more thing, Xiao Ye, there's something I'd like you to help me with."

...

All was silent in the Hundred Herb Hall.

Ever since Ling Yu had been pushed into retreat by Elder Yu a month ago, she had not come looking for trouble any further. Everything was so peaceful that everyone had forgotten about Ling Yu's existence.

When Shopkeeper Zhao spotted Gu Ruoyun walking into the hall, he was overjoyed. He hurriedly walked towards her in welcome, "My Lady, you're here?"

"Mm, where's Elder Yu?"

My Lady, Elder Yu isn't in the Hundred Herb Hall at the moment. Would you like me to summon him?"

"Yes, summon Elder Yu and tell him that I have some urgent business. Also..." Gu Ruoyun casually brought out a piece of paper and said expressionlessly, "Bring all the herbs written on this piece of paper to me, as fast as you can."

"Yes, my Lady."

Shopkeeper Zhao glanced at the herbs on Gu Ruoyun's list and was quietly surprised. However, he respectfully took his leave without saying another word.

His heart felt curious. The herbs that my Lady has asked for were extremely precious. Some of which would only grow a single leaf every few hundred years. Shopkeeper Zhao wondered. What was she going to do with these?

However, thanks to the Hundred Herb Hall's vast resources, it was only a matter of moments before he brought all the herbs before Gu Ruoyun.

Shortly after, Elder Yu also appeared as well...

"I need to leave for a moment. Elder Yu, please wait for me outside the room and don't allow anyone to come in and disturb me."

After that, she turned and walked towards the courtyard at the back of the Hundred Herb Hall.

Although Shopkeeper Zhao and Elder Yu felt extremely curious, none of them questioned Gu Ruoyun's orders.

Right after Gu Ruoyun had entered the Ancient Divine Pagoda, she immediately asked, "Zixie, I've already gotten the materials for the Spirit Gathering Pill. Are we going to start refining it now?"

Zixie smiled, "The method used to refine this Spirit Gathering Pill is a little different from how we refined the Qi Gathering Pill. However, they will produce the same result. It shouldn't be too difficult for you. Alright then, you can try it out now."

"Okay."

Gu Ruoyun nodded before turning her gaze towards the cauldron.

The sun was setting in the west.

The old man stood outside the door, not making a single move, just like a statue. His Lady had been inside the room for the entire day, from the time she had entered up until this moment, and there has not been a single hint of movement either. He knew nothing about the situation within that room.

Just as he was beginning to make guesses on the reason why Gu Ruoyun had been looking for him, the door to the room behind him slowly pushed open. Then, the girl's clear voice called for him.

"Elder Yu, please come in."

"Yes, my Lady."

Elder Yu turned to walk into the room. He looked at the girl standing in the center of the room, and said with an expression of utmost respect, "I wonder what business have you summoned me for today, my Lady?"

Chapter 99: An Early Stage Martial Warrior (4)

"Take this pill, Elder Yu."

She opened her hands to reveal a round green pill in the center of her palm.

"This is..." Elder Yu was surprised.

A Qi Gathering Pill? Elder Yu wondered. But hasn't her Ladyship already said to him that the Qi Gathering Pill would not have the ability to help him break through his bottleneck?

No!

Wrong!

Elder Yu frowned. This was not a Qi Gathering Pill... It couldn't be. The spiritual power contained within this single pill was even denser than that of the Qi Gathering Pill...

As if she heard the suspicion that was growing within Elder Yu's heart, Gu Ruoyun opened her mouth and muttered, "Spirit Gathering Pill."

"Spirit Gathering Pill?"

Elder Yu's heart trembled upon hearing those three words. He reached out with a shaking hand, took the green pill and slowly placed it in his mouth...

Suddenly, a wave of dense spiritual Qi poured into the surroundings continuously. If the effect that the Qi Gathering Pill had brought about was a thick mist, then at this very moment, Elder Yu was completely enveloped in a layer of fog — not even a single strand of hair on his head could be seen.

Right this moment, the spiritual Qi surrounding him flowed through his channels and rushed into his spiritual ocean, causing

the bottleneck within him that had acted like a stopper for so long to shift ever so slightly.

Elder Yu was overjoyed. Only the heavens knew how long it had been since I have felt this kind of feeling. Years? Or perhaps, it's even more than that? I've always thought that I would be stuck in the final stages of a Martial General forever, never being able to break through to the rank of Martial King, but now...

This... this was literally a miracle! Elder Yu thought joyfully.

Elder Yu hurriedly sat down, crossed his legs and began to cultivate as he fought for every precious second of cultivation that he could get out of the pill. He was not willing to waste even a single second of it.

Gu Ruoyun looked at the green fog that surrounded Elder Yu, and a deep thought flashed through her eyes. Suddenly, a burst of noise was heard from outside the Hundred Herb Hall, making her furrow her brows.

"What's going on outside?"

She glanced at Elder Yu and paused in thought. She then said, "Elder Yu won't be able to breakthrough for at least an hour or so. I'll go out and have a look."

Then, without taking a second glance at Elder Yu, she turned and left.

Right on, on the main street, Ling Yu glared angrily at the crowd with her hands on her waist. Her heart was filled with hatred. She would never forget that, just a month ago, this damned Hundred Herb Hall had chased her out, and swept the rest of her dignity out the door along with it!

The worst part was that, after finding out about what she had said outside the Hundred Herb Hall, her aunt had scolded her furiously. Even her uncle, the Emperor, wanted to question her for her crimes. If it her aunt did not plead for her sake, she would have

become a convicted felon, rotting in the prison cells.

She could not understand it. The Hundred Herb Hall was just a small merchant store. What was so great about them, that even her aunt's power would be of no use?

However, she did not need to fear them anymore...

As she thought of the person behind her, Ling Yu raised her chin and spoke commandingly, "Get Gu Ruoyun and that Elder Yu out here to face their punishments!"

Shopkeeper Zhao wanted to speak before he suddenly saw Gu Ruoyun walk out from within the Hundred Herb Hall. He opened his mouth briefly, then decided to close it without saying anything.

"Gu Ruoyun, I thought you were hiding behind the Hundred Herb Hall's protection. Who would have thought that you would dare to walk out like this after being in hiding for a month!" Ling Yu sneered, hatred burning like hellfire in her eyes, "You killed my grandfather and brother, and then caused my family to become destitute and homeless. Today, I'm going to use your blood as a sacrifice to appease their spirits in heaven."

Gu Ruoyun had heard of how Ling Yu had been beaten and chased out by Elder Yu a month ago. Seeing as she still dared to return to their doorstep again, Gu Ruoyun could not help but raise her eyebrows. Her gaze then moved to the man dressed in black, who stood behind Ling Yu...

The man's body was completely covered in black clothing. Even his face could not be seen, but...

Gu Ruoyun smiled coldly. It's no wonder that Ling Yu would dare to return to the Hundred Herb Hall. She had this man to back her up.

A Martial King!

She didn't think that Ling Yu could actually find a Martial King. The power held by Martial Kings were so strong, that they could

completely dominate the entire Azure Dragon Country if they so wished.

Chapter 100: Martial King vs. Martial King

(1)

It was at this very moment that the gaze from the man in black landed on Gu Ruoyun.

In that instant, all the blood in Gu Ruoyun's body froze. It felt like a venomous snake was wrapped around her neck, making her feel like she was being choked. It was extremely uncomfortable, to say the least.

"Gu Ruoyun!" Ling Yu's gaze slowly began to turn cold, and she sneered, "This time, you won't be able to escape your punishment, even if you hide behind the protection of the Hundred Herb Hall!"

This woman must die! A vicious streak flashed across Ling Yu's eyes. Her sneer grew even more pronounced.

She took a few steps back at the thought of this and looked respectfully towards the man in black behind her, "Mister Sai, I'll leave this matter to you."

"Mm."

The man in black spoke with a hoarse voice. His venomous snake-like gaze was locked onto Gu Ruoyun. Following that, an intimidating wave of energy burst out from his body. Gu Ruoyun's body wobbled under the effects of his aura, and her gaze turned ice cold.

"Ling Yu." Gu Ruoyun smiled out of the blue. Her expression was unreadable, "I really admire you. You've managed to get a Martial King here to back you up."

Just as the sound of Gu Ruoyun's voice began to fade, the man in black narrowed his eyes. It was as if they became a pair of sharpened twin blades, both attempting to pierce through the young girl's body.

He had never expected that Gu Ruoyun would be able to see through his true strength.

For cultivators, it was only when you broke through to a certain rank that you would be able to comprehend all the powers of the rank achieved. So, unless Gu Ruoyun was once a Martial King, she should not have been able to know the true extent of his power.

However, this little girl was able to see through him just based on the aura his body gave off. This was something he would never have thought was possible in his lifetime.

He had come to Azure Dragon Country in secrecy. Should those people ever find out...

The man's murderous intent thickened at the thought of this, and his eyes darkened into deep black holes.

What the man in black did not know was although Gu Ruoyun's current level of strength was only at that of a Martial Warrior, she was already at the level of Martial Honor in her past life. She had also remained at the level of a Martial King for years. How would it be possible that she would be unable to comprehend the true power this man held?

"A Martial King? Holy... Ling Yu actually managed to find an expert at the rank of a Martial King!"

"To the best of my knowledge, Wuqing, the assassin who also happens to be the top expert of Azure Dragon Country that comes and goes without a trace is only at the late stages of a Martial General. To think that a Martial King has actually made an appearance. Is the world about to go through a great change?"

"It would seem like the Ling family is going to rise back into power..."

Upon hearing the surprised exclamation from the crowd, an arrogant smile appeared on Ling Yu's face.

In all honesty, she had no idea where the man in black had come

from. He was the one who found her, simply because he wanted to borrow the Ling family's name as a guise to kill Gu Ruoyun. However, that did not stop the crowd from assuming that this man was someone from the Ling family.

"Ling Yu, I'm rather curious as to how you've managed to find a Martial King." Gu Ruoyun restrained the chill in her eyes. Instead, she spoke with a smile.

Ling Yu was just about to speak, when the man in black beside cut in, interrupting her with his hoarse voice, "Are you trying to stall for time?"

Hearing this, Gu Ruoyun's smile grew even more pronounced.

That's right! She was indeed trying to stall for more time.

She only had to wait for Elder Yu to finish his breakthrough to Martial King, then he would be able to fight off the man in front of her.

"Wonderful, Gu Ruoyun! You're actually trying to stall for time." Ling Yu reacted instantly. She raised her finger accusingly and angrily said, "Did you really think that someone would come to save you this time? The Hundred Herb Hall? Or that silver-haired man that you've somehow seduced? I'm telling you, all those people mean nothing when faced with a Martial King. This time, no one's going to come to your aid."

Table of Contents

[Evil Emperor's Wild Consort](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Acknowledgement](#)

[Chapter 1: A Contemptible Man \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 2: A Contemptible Man \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 3: A Contemptible Man \(3\)](#)

[Chapter 4: Good-For-Nothing \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 5: Good-For-Nothing \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 6: Good-For-Nothing \(3\)](#)

[Chapter 7: Good-For-Nothing \(4\)](#)

[Chapter 8: Ancient Phoenix, Zixie \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 9: Ancient Phoenix, Zixie \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 10: The Art of Refining Pills \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 11: Pill Refinement \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 12: Pill Refinement \(3\)](#)

[Chapter 13: Pill Refinement \(4\)](#)

[Chapter 14: Pill Refinement \(5\)](#)

[Chapter 15: Pill Refinement \(6\)](#)

[Chapter 16: Pill Refinement \(7\)](#)

[Chapter 17: The Grave And Stern Crown Prince \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 18: The Grave And Stern Crown Prince \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 19: The Grave And Stern Crown Prince \(3\)](#)

[Chapter 20: The Grave And Stern Crown Prince \(4\)](#)

[Chapter 21: The Grave And Stern Crown Prince \(5\)](#)

[Chapter 22: A Good-For-Nothing? Who? \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 23: A Good-For-Nothing? Who? \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 24: A Good-For-Nothing? Who? \(3\)](#)

[Chapter 25: A Good-For-Nothing? Who? \(4\)](#)

[Chapter 26: The Sinister Ling Family Is Met With Danger \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 27: The Sinister Ling Family Is Met With Danger \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 28: The Sinister Ling Family Is Met With Danger \(3\)](#)

[Chapter 29: A Peerlessly Beautiful Man, A Wife? \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 30: A Peerlessly Beautiful Man, A Wife? \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 31: A Peerlessly Beautiful Man, A Wife? \(3\)](#)

[Chapter 32: The Shameless Weapon Refining Sect \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 33: The Shameless Weapon Refining Sect \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 34: The Shameless Weapon Refining Sect \(3\)](#)

[Chapter 35: The Shameless Weapon Refining Sect \(4\)](#)

[Chapter 36: The Shameless Weapon Refining Sect \(5\)](#)

[Chapter 37: The Jealousy Of Shi Yun \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 38: The Jealousy Of Shi Yun \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 39: The Jealousy Of Shi Yun \(3\)](#)

[Chapter 40: Qianbei Ye Is Jealous \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 41: Qianbei Ye Is Jealous \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 42: Qianbei Ye Is Jealous \(3\)](#)

[Chapter 43: Dongfang Shaoze's Revenge \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 44: Dongfang Shaoze's Revenge \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 45: Dongfang Shaoze's Revenge \(3\)](#)

[Chapter 46: Dongfang Shaoze's Revenge \(4\)](#)

[Chapter 47: Eternal Glory? Everlasting Infamy? \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 48: Eternal Glory? Everlasting Infamy? \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 49: Eternal Glory? Everlasting Infamy? \(3\)](#)

[Chapter 50: The Gu Family Visits Again \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 51: The Gu Family Visits Again \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 52: The Gu Family Visits Again \(3\)](#)

[Chapter 53: No Such Thing As The Most Impudent, Only More Brazen \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 54: No Such Thing As The Most Imprudent, Only More Brazen \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 55: The Rise of The Almighty Army \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 56: The Rise of The Almighty Army \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 57: The Rise of The Almighty Army \(3\)](#)

[Chapter 58: The Rise of The Almighty Army \(4\)](#)

[Chapter 59: The Rise of The Almighty Army \(5\)](#)

[Chapter 60: The Duel That Turned The Tide \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 61: The Duel That Turned The Tide \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 62: The Duel That Turned The Tide \(3\)](#)

[Chapter 63: The Duel That Turned The Tide \(4\)](#)

[Chapter 64: The Duel That Turned The Tide \(5\)](#)

[Chapter 65: The Duel That Turned The Tide \(6\)](#)

[Chapter 66: The Duel That Turned The Tide \(7\)](#)

[Chapter 67: The Duel That Turned The Tide \(8\)](#)

[Chapter 68: The Duel That Turned The Tide \(9\)](#)

[Chapter 69: I'm A Nice Person \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 70: I'm A Nice Person \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 71: I'm A Nice Person \(3\)](#)

[Chapter 72: Sinister Old Man Ling \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 73: Sinister Old Man Ling \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 74: Qianbei Ye's Fury \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 75: Qianbei Ye's Fury \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 76: Qianbei Ye's Fury \(3\)](#)

[Chapter 77: Your Majesty \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 78: Your Majesty \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 79: The Crown Prince Visits \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 80: The Crown Prince Visits \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 81: The Crown Prince Visits \(3\)](#)

[Chapter 82: The Crown Prince Visits \(4\)](#)

[Chapter 83: Life Comes From Dongfang \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 84: Life Comes From Dongfang \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 85: Life Comes From Dongfang \(3\)](#)

[Chapter 86: Life Comes From Dongfang \(4\)](#)

[Chapter 87: The Taming of the Ghost Doctor \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 88: The Taming of the Ghost Doctor \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 89: The Taming of the Ghost Doctor \(3\)](#)

[Chapter 90: The Taming of the Ghost Doctor \(4\)](#)

[Chapter 91: The Taming Of The Ghost Doctor \(5\)](#)

[Chapter 92: Ling Yu's Greediness \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 93: Ling Yu's Greediness \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 94: Ling Yu's Greediness \(3\)](#)

[Chapter 95: Ling Yu's Greediness \(4\)](#)

[Chapter 96: An Early Stage Martial Warrior \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 97: An Early Stage Martial Warrior \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 98: An Early Stage Martial Warrior \(3\)](#)

[Chapter 99: An Early Stage Martial Warrior \(4\)](#)

[Chapter 100: Martial King vs. Martial King \(1\)](#)